

Jacob Milgrom

62
73
50
3 | 185
30
91.7

Harry Ingersoll

11 Upper Pyne

Get Contes choisis

Maupassant

read Sur l'eau

for next Wednesday

AM 3)

LESSONS IN

# FRENCH SYNTAX

AND

# COMPOSITION

BY

W. U. VREELAND

AND

WILLIAM KOREN

*Princeton University*



NEW YORK

HENRY HOLT AND COMPANY

1907

ROBERT DRUMMOND COMPANY, PRINTERS, NEW YORK

# PREFACE

The purpose of these Lessons is to state as briefly and as clearly as possible the most important rules of French syntax, and to offer a sufficient quantity of material for translation from English into French to give the student a thorough drill in applying these rules. A knowledge of the forms and of the simplest rules is presupposed.

By having the syntax brief and the exercises placed directly after the part of the syntax under discussion, no time or patience need be lost in looking up references to grammars, nor will the student be confused by a multiplicity of rules, many of which, while necessary in a complete grammar, would serve only to bewilder the mind of the beginner. To facilitate references the syntax has been paragraphed continuously.

It has been found best not to pay any attention to the recent changes now "tolerated" in French orthography and syntax.

The three sets of exercises following each lesson are graded according to their difficulty, thus giving sufficient material for different classes of students. In order to prevent mechanical translations the sentences of a given lesson are so chosen that they do not all illustrate the syntax of the lesson.

As the idioms in French offer one of the greatest difficulties in mastering the language, a few of the most common idiomatic phrases have been added to each lesson, and sentences containing these phrases are given in the exercises for the sake of further drill. Special attention has also been given to the modal auxiliaries.

The part on letter-writing is intended to give the student a knowledge of French forms of address. Only a few notes are given, because this part of French composition offers the best opportunity for original

writing which adds variety and interest to the work and which is of the greatest value in learning to write French. The teacher must, however, control both the form and the subject-matter of the letters in order to prevent the student from making too exclusive use of phrases already familiar.

The vocabulary has been made as complete as possible in order to avoid tiresome cross-references.

The authors wish to acknowledge their special indebtedness to Professor F. L. Critchlow of Princeton University for his careful revision of the whole of the manuscript, and for his many valuable suggestions, most of which have been incorporated in the book.

Thanks are also due to Professor Christian Gauss of Princeton University, who has read part of the manuscript, and to Professor W. Sihler of Luther College, for reading part of the proof.

PRINCETON, N. J., January, 1907.

# CONTENTS

## PART I

### Lessons in Syntax, and Exercises


PAGE

1. The Definite Article ........ 1
2. The Partitive ........ 5
3. Adjectives ........ 9
4. Personal Pronouns ........ 14
5. Disjunctives ........ 19
6. Relative Pronouns ........ 23
7. Interrogatives ........ 27
8. Possessives ........ 31
9. Demonstratives ........ 36
10. **Ce** and **Il** ........ 39
11. Indefinites ........ 43
12. Position of Subject ........ 48
13. Tenses ........ 54
14. The Subjunctive in Dependent Clauses ........ 61
15. The Subjunctive in Dependent Clauses (*continued*) ........ 65
16. The Subjunctive in Dependent Clauses (*continued*) ........ 68
17. The Subjunctive in Independent Clauses ........ 73
18. Participles ........ 78
19. The Infinitive ........ 82
20. Adverbs ........ 88
21. Pleonastic **ne** ........ 93


## PART II


Letter-writing ........ 98


v

## PART III

### Selections for Translation

PAGE
1. Talleyrand and Madame de Staël .......................... 103
2. A Diplomatic Answer .......................... 103
3. The Stupid Peasant .......................... 103
4. A Good Riddance .......................... 103
5. Talleyrand and His Valet .......................... 104
6. A Cabman as Art-critic .......................... 104
7. A Clever Answer .......................... 105
8. A Piece of Information .......................... 105
9. An Examination .......................... 105
10. Castilian Pride .......................... 106
11. A Spendthrift .......................... 106
12. Wanted, a Preceptor .......................... 106
13. Molière and the Doctor .......................... 107
14. Contentment .......................... 107
15. Tit for Tat .......................... 107
16. Rachel as Vender of Bouquets .......................... 108
17. A Lesson in Good Manners .......................... 108
18. An Absent-minded Professor .......................... 108
19. The Two Rich Men .......................... 109
20. Prediction of an Astrologer .......................... 109
21. Sixtus the Fifth .......................... 110
22. We Must All Die .......................... 110
23. Except the Lord-mayor .......................... 110
24. An Ambiguous Compliment .......................... 111
25. Three Sheets in the Wind .......................... 111
26. The Tip .......................... 112
27. Rabelais and the Cardinal .......................... 112
28. Bold Answer of a Calvinist Officer to Louis XIV .......................... 113
29. An Unintended Insult .......................... 113
30. Death of Henry IV .......................... 114
31. La Misère .......................... 115

---

Verbs .......................... 126
[illegible] .......................... 130
[illegible] .......................... 131
[illegible] .......................... 133
[illegible] .......................... 145

# EXPLANATIONS

**Brackets** [ ] indicate that the words inclosed should not be translated; **parentheses** ( ) include either helps for translating, or words which, though not necessary in the English version, should be translated into French.

# ABBREVIATIONS

| | | | |
|---|---|---|---|
| *a.* | —active | *m.* (*masc.*) | —masculine |
| *adj.* | —adjective | *n.* | —noun |
| *adv.* | —adverb | *neg.* | —negative |
| *conj.* | —conjunction | *part.* | —participle |
| *def.* | —definite | *pers.* | —personal |
| *dem.* | —demonstrative | *pl.* | —plural |
| *f.* (*fem.*) | —feminine | *prep.* | —preposition |
| *fig.* | —figuratively | *pron.* | —pronoun |
| *imperf.* | —imperfect | *refl.* | —reflexive |
| *indef.* | —indefinite | *rel.* | —relative |
| *indic.* | —indicative | *sing.* | —singular |
| *int.* | —interjection | *tr.* | —transitive |
| *intr.* | —intransitive | *v.* | —verb |

# PART I

## LESSON I

### THE DEFINITE ARTICLE

**1.** The definite article is required in French contrary to English usage:

1. Before an abstract or a collective noun, or a noun used in a general sense to denote a whole class:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Les Français aiment la gloire.** | The French love glory. |
| **Les enfants aiment les gâteaux.** | Children like cakes. |

2. Before a title of dignity or profession:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Le roi Louis.** | King Louis. |
| **Le docteur Tronchin.** | Doctor Tronchin. |
| **Monsieur le Marquis.** | The marquis. |

3. Before a noun used distributively, in which case the indefinite article is used in English:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Cinq sous la livre.** | Five cents a pound. |
| **Trois fois la semaine** (*or more commonly, speaking of time,* **par semaine**). | Three times a week. |

Note also:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Les bateaux partent les dimanches.** | The boats leave Sundays. |
| **Il a les yeux bleus.** | He has blue eyes. |

4. Before the name of a season and before a geographical name except of a town:

| | |
|---|---|
| **L'hiver.** | Winter. |
| **La France.** | France. |
| *But,* **Paris.** | Paris. |

Note that the article is omitted:

(*a*) When the preposition **en** is used before the name of a country:

| | |
|---|---|
| **En France.** | In (*or* to) France. |

(*b*) When the name of a country is preceded by **de**, meaning **from**; or when the **de** + a noun is equivalent to an adjective:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Cette lettre vient de France.** | This letter comes from France. |
| **Le vin de France.** | French wine. |
| **Une porte de fer.** | An iron door. |

5. The definite article should be repeated before each substantive used independently:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Le père, la mère, et la sœur du garçon.** | The boy's father, mother, and sister. |

**2.** The article, definite or indefinite, is generally not used in French:

1. Before the title of a book or chapter:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Histoire de France.** | History of France. |

2. Before a numeral following the noun it qualifies:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Charles premier.** | Charles the First. |

3. In many proverbial expressions and idiomatic phrases:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Avoir tort.** | To be wrong. |
| **Faire bonne chère.** | To live well. |
| **Avoir faim.** | To be hungry. |
| **Beauté sans bonté ne vaut rien.** | Beauty without goodness is worth nothing. |

4. Before a noun in apposition:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Henri II, fils et successeur de François Ier.** | Henry II, the son and successor of Francis I. |

But, in order to distinguish more clearly:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Louis XII, le père du peuple.** | Louis XII, the father of the people. |

5. Before a predicate noun which, in a general way, indicates nationality, condition or profession, and qualifies the personal sub- or object of certain verbs:

| | |
|---|---|
| **officier.** | He is an officer. |
| **bon connaisseur.** | I believe him a good judge. |

But, after **c'est, ce sont**, the article or a qualifying word must be used before a predicate noun:

| | |
|---|---|
| **C'est une bonne chose.** | It is a good thing. |
| **Ce sont nos amis.** | They are our friends. |

**3.** Note the following expressions:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Mille soldats.** | A thousand soldiers. |
| **Quel joli enfant!** | What a pretty child! |
| **Jamais homme n'a fait tant de folies.** | Never has a man done so many foolish things. |
| **Faire la guerre.** | To make war. |
| **L'année passée.** | Last year. |
| **C'est le numéro sept.** | It is number seven. |
| **Toutes les semaines.** | Every week. |
| **Le vendredi saint.** | Good Friday. |
| **Avoir le temps.** | To have time. |
| **A l'école.** | At school. |

**4.** IDIOMATIC PHRASES.

| | |
|---|---|
| **J'ai beau parler.** | It is no use for me to speak, I speak in vain. |
| **Tout à l'heure.** | Just now, a little while ago (*when referring to the immediate past*); presently, in a moment (*when referring to the immediate future*). |
| **De bonne heure.** | Early, in good time. |
| **De meilleure heure.** | Earlier. |
| **A la bonne heure!** | Very good! very well! good! |

## EXERCISE I

I

1. He is French, but he speaks English almost without accent. 2. We are learning history and geography.—Very well; I am very glad of it (*en être bien aise*). 3. Children always imitate grown-up people. 4. Science is the search for (*de*) truth. 5. The children are playing in the garden; they do not like to stay in the house. 6. Winter is the dreariest season of the year. 7. Do you like apples and pears? 8. He is coming back immediately. 9. My brother likes coffee, but I prefer milk. 10. Come earlier to-morrow morning. 11. Queen Marie-Antoinette died on the scaffold. 12. Henry IV, king of France,

was assassinated. 13. Union is (*faire*) strength. 14. He spends the winter in town and the summer in the country. 15. I have traveled in England and in France. 16. Laziness is the mother of all vices. 17. Sugar costs five cents a pound. 18. Avarice is a low and shameful passion. 19. He is learning drawing and dancing. 20. Doctor Livet is spending the winter in Italy; he is not well. 21. English railroads are very well built. 22. We shall see them all, mother, father, brother, and sister; they are all at home. 23. I look in vain, I see nothing.

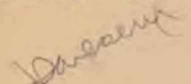
2

1. Oranges are grown in southern countries. 2. Let us do that to-day, for I shall not have time to-morrow. 3. French fruit is better than English fruit. 4. Never was a prince better loved. 5. Louis XVI, king of France, was beheaded the twenty-first of January, 1793. 6. The bedrooms are in the second story; the kitchen is on the ground-floor. 7. It is no use for me to invite him; he will not come. 8. I have been told that he is a merchant. 9. Eggs sold as high as two francs a dozen. 10. The more beautiful a woman is, the more modest she should be. 11. Mrs. B. is at home Mondays and Thursdays. 12. I passed through Holland and Germany. 13. He promised to come back.—Very good! 14. The north wind is colder than the east wind, but the south wind is the warmest. 15. Here is a piano which has cost me a pretty penny. 16. The most profound thoughts and the most brilliant ideas are the fruits of genius. 17. England has numerous colonial settlements. 18. I am going to see him presently. 19. Nature does not treat all men in the same way. 20. Peace brings back tranquillity and wealth. 21. Doctor Tronchin was for some time the friend of J. J. Rousseau. 22. John is at school, he will not be back before five o'clock; it isn't worth while (*ce n'est pas la peine*) to go after him. 23. The dog was hungry even after having eaten his dinner; he is always hungry. 24. Charles gets up early and goes to bed late.

3

1. The talent of a man without morality is a public misfortune. 2. Tolerance is the respect for the liberty of others (*d'autrui*). 3. He likes reading as much as you do playing. 4. Do you know French?—

No, sir, but my friend speaks French very well. 5. Schiller liked the smell of rotten apples. 6. Letters in our days are shorter than the letters of the seventeenth century. 7. My father always takes a cup of chocolate for breakfast. 8. He said so just now. 9. This woman has blue eyes and blond hair. 10. Love and friendship exclude each other. 11. This man has neither vices nor virtues, neither talents nor defects, nor passions of any kind. 12. If we did not have so many faults we should not take so much pleasure in noticing those of others. 13. Conscience is the best book of morals which we have. 14. Do what he may (*avoir beau faire*) he will never succeed. 15. Those who apply themselves too much to little things generally become incapable of great things. 16. What is the profession of your son?—He is a soldier. 17. You are wrong and your friend is right. 18. If you buy the superfluous to-day, you will sell the necessary to-morrow. 19. Careless children almost always become lazy men. 20. My friend used to come Thursdays. 21. He is now traveling in Europe. 22. What a pretty watch! you must have bought it in Geneva. 23. In the spring-time the sun rises earlier and sets later every week.



## LESSON II

### THE PARTITIVE

**5.** Partitive with **de** + the Article.—When a noun expresses only a part of the class which it denotes, it is said to be used in a partitive sense. This is sometimes expressed in English by placing *some* or *any* before the noun, but is usually to be understood from the context. In French this idea is regularly rendered by placing **de** + the definite article before the noun:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Il a des livres.** | He has some books. |
| **Elle a du pain blanc.** | She has some white bread. |

**6.** Omission of the Article.—**De** alone, however, is used before the noun:

1. After a general negation:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Il n'a pas d'argent.** | He has no money. |

*Note.*—When the negative is not general the article is retained:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Je n'ai pas de l'argent pour le dépenser follement.** | I haven't any money to spend foolishly. |

2. When the noun is preceded by an adjective:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Il a de bons livres.** | He has some good books. |

*But*, **des grands-pères, des beaux-arts, des petits-pois,** etc., **grands-pères,** etc., being considered as compound nouns.

3. After nouns and adverbs expressing quantity and number:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Beaucoup de choses.** | Many things. |
| **Un morceau de sucre.** | A piece of sugar. |

*But*, **bien (la plupart) des** (*not* **de**) **choses,** many (most) things.

**7.** Omission of both **de** and the Article.—Both **de** and the article are omitted in the following cases:

1. In long enumerations:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Femmes, enfants, vieillards, tous étaient arrivés.** | Women, children, and old men, all had arrived. |

2. After **ni . . . ni, sans . . . ni, soit . . . soit, tant . . . que**:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Il n'a ni livres ni argent.** | He has neither books nor money. |
| **Sans amis ni argent.** | Without friends or money. |

3. After the preposition **de**, and sometimes after the prepositions **avec, par, sur,** and **sans**:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Vivre de pain.** | To live on bread. |
| **Sans peur.** | Without fear. |

**8.** Idiomatic Phrases.

| | |
|---|---|
| **Venir de** (+ infinitive). | To have just. |
| **Je viens de recevoir une lettre.** | I have just received a letter. |
| **Il venait de le voir.** | He had just seen him. |
| **Se mettre à.** | To begin. |
| **Je viens de recevoir de ses nouvelles.** | I have just heard from him (her). |
| **Donnez-moi de vos nouvelles.** | Let me hear from you. |

**Savoir** = to know (more particularly with the mind), to be aware of.

**Connaître** = to know (more particularly with the senses), to be acquainted with:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Je ne savais pas cela.** | I did not know that. |
| **Connaissez-vous cet homme?** | Are you acquainted with this man? |

## Exercise II

### 1

1. There is no rule without an exception. 2. I bought many books last year. 3. Have you any money? 4. Give me some of these pears. 5. Have you written any letters to-day? 6. He lives in a stone house. 7. Some men have more wit than knowledge. 8. I bought some coffee this morning. 9. He is (*c'est*) a man who has good qualities. 10. Does this boy know his lessons? 11. Flatterers are the worst enemies. 12. Where do you come from?—I come from France. 13. He is happy, he has just had good news from his father. 14. The fear of death is natural to man. 15. Good books are faithful friends. 16. Washington, the capital of the United States, is a very beautiful city. 17. Horses and cows are useful animals. 18. There are some wild animals which do a great deal of harm. 19. New Orleans is one of the oldest cities in the (*aux*) United States. 20. You always come early. 21. Do not give me any wine, if you please; I prefer lemonade.—Very well, sir. 22. French and German are living languages. 23. Please give me some of the new postage stamps; aren't they pretty! 24. Are you acquainted with these boys? 25. Did you buy many beautiful things in Paris?

### 2

1. That is bad money. 2. Do you know many of La Fontaine's fables? 3. Your brother went a moment ago, without leaving any address. 4. The train leaves at ten o'clock; I haven't any time to lose. 5. Look! it is raining in torrents (*à verse*), I prefer to stay in the house after all. 6. He thinks that most men are happy. 7. There are some beautiful flowers; how sweet they smell! 8. Do you want a cup of coffee? 9. I have only good news from your sister; she is much better. 10. Do hurry, we have only five minutes! 11. Did you not receive any letters this morning? 12. The poor boy has neither father nor mother. 13. We have often been in luck. 14. This metal resembles gold. 15. I need six pair of stockings, two pair of shoes, and a straw hat. 16. Are there any trees along the boulevards?

17. With energy and will one succeeds in everything. 18. Have you any change?—I haven't a cent. 19. In the south of France they cultivate many kinds of flowers. 20. I had just time enough to tell him to let us hear from him often.

3

1. It was in vain that we took towns, won battles, we never went fast enough for him. 2. Yes, I noticed some pretty country-houses, surrounded by orchards. 3. Are you not going to give this beggar some bread and milk? He is very hungry. 4. How far is it from New York to Philadelphia by rail? 5. Did you come by the six-o'clock train?—Yes.—Then you got up very early. 6. We are very good friends, but we do not always agree. 7. I shall not give you any apples from this tree. 8. The children began to run, thinking that the man could not catch them. 9. I am in need of money, can you lend me some? 10. Are you acquainted with that man? They say he has no courage; he is afraid of being a soldier. 11. Waiter, bring me some cold water; this is warm. 12. No, thank you, no beer; I don't drink beer. 13. A salad is dressed with salt, pepper, oil, and vinegar. 14. What! haven't you any other kind of bread?—Excuse me, sir, this is the best there is now, but we shall have some fresh bread presently. 15. There are places which one admires, there are others where one would like to live. 16. There is a great number of pictures and statues in this museum. 17. How much time will you need to do that?—About an hour.—Very good; then I shall wait for you here. 18. Even to-day the speeches of Demosthenes are admired as masterpieces of eloquence. 19. Demosthenes used sometimes to put little pebbles into his mouth in order to force himself to pronounce every syllable distinctly.

## LESSON III

### ADJECTIVES

**9.** Agreement.—An adjective agrees in gender and number with the noun qualified. When it qualifies two or more nouns, it is in the plural; it must be in the *masculine* plural if the substantives are of different genders:

**La mère et le père sont prudents.** The father and mother are prudent.

*But*, **Une fenêtre ou un volet ouvert,** 'An open window or shutter.' Here the adjective modifies one, and not both nouns.

**Les champs, la plaine, la montagne était couverte de neige,** 'The fields, the plain, the mountain, were covered with snow.' In a climax like this the adjective agrees with the last noun.

**10. Demi, nu, feu,** and the prepositional participles like **excepté, attendu,** are inflected only when they follow the noun:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Une demi-heure.** | A half-hour. |
| **Une heure et demie.** | An hour and a half. |
| **Nu-pieds** (*but*, **pieds nus**). | Barefoot. |
| **Excepté les dames** (*but*, **les dames exceptées**). | Except the ladies. |
| **Feu la reine** (*but*, **la feue reine**). | The late queen. |

**11.** Position.—While in English the adjectives generally precede the noun, in French they quite as frequently follow. They usually follow the noun when used literally, to specify, emphasize, etc., or to denote an accidental or accessory quality, e.g. **la rose blanche; un homme aveugle; un homme cruel.** But when used figuratively, or to denote a quality naturally associated with a noun, they usually precede, e.g. **la blanche neige; un aveugle amour; un noir chagrin.** Often the position of adjectives depends upon the question of emphasis, or euphony, or the choice of the writer.

Some of the commonest short adjectives generally precede, as **beau, bon, grand, gros, jeune, mauvais, meilleur, moindre, petit, long, vieux, joli, court, haut, sot:**

| | |
|---|---|
| **Un bon petit garçon.** | A good little boy. |

*But,* **un homme bon et savant,** because the two adjectives are joined by a conjunction and **savant** generally follows its noun. Without conjunction: **Un grand général anglais.**

**12.** The adjective regularly follows the substantive:

1. When denoting physical qualities, as shape, color, etc.:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Une cravate noire.** | A black cravat. |
| **La race blanche.** | The white race. |

2. When derived from a proper name:

| | |
|---|---|
| **La langue française.** | The French language. |

3. When denoting politics, profession, or religion:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Un journal républicain.** | A republican paper. |

4. When it is a past participle or noun used adjectively:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Un enfant gâté.** | A spoiled child. |
| **Un poète philosophe.** | A philosophical poet. |

*Note.*—**Un livre excellent,** *but,* **l'excellent livre de mon ami,** because the noun is modified by a prepositional phrase.

**13.** Some adjectives have a different meaning according as they are placed after or before the substantive:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Une preuve certaine.** | A certain (positive) proof. |
| **Un certain homme.** | A certain man. |
| **Une étoffe chère.** | An expensive material. |
| **Mon cher garçon.** | My dear boy. |
| **Un homme franc.** | A candid man. |
| **Un franc coquin.** | A downright scoundrel. |
| **Un homme honnête.** | A civil man. |
| **Un honnête homme.** | An honest man. |
| **Un auteur pauvre.** | An indigent author. |
| **Un pauvre auteur.** | A second-rate (pitiable) author. |
| **Un habit propre.** | A clean coat. |
| **Mon propre habit.** | My own coat. |

**14.** Other adjectives have a different meaning with certain nouns only:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Un homme brave.** | A brave man. |
| **Un brave homme.** | A worthy man. |
| **Un homme grand.** | A tall man. |
| **Un grand homme.** | A great man. |
| **Un homme petit.** | A mean man. |
| **Un petit homme.** | A short man. |
| **L'année dernière.** | Last year. |
| **La dernière année.** | The last year [of a series]. |
| **Un chapeau nouveau.** | A new-fashioned hat. |
| **Un nouveau chapeau.** | Another hat. |
| **Un chapeau neuf.** | A new hat. |

## NUMERALS

**15.** 1. Contrary to English usage the cardinal numbers are used in French (except **premier,** 'first') to denote the day of the month or the numerical title of sovereigns:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Le douze juillet.** | The twelfth of July. |
| **Henri deux.** | Henry the Second. |
| **Il est venu le neuf septembre.** | He came on the ninth of September. |
| **Charles premier.** | Charles the First. |

2. Otherwise the usage is largely the same in both languages:

| | |
|---|---|
| **La troisième scène.** | The third scene. |
| **Chapitre cinq** (*or* **cinquième**). | Chapter five (*or* fifth). |

**16.** Note the following expressions:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Trois heures moins un quart.** | A quarter before three. |
| **Il est deux heures et demie.** | It is half-past two. |
| **Six heures cinquante.** | Six fifty. |
| **Quel jour du mois avons-nous?** *or*, **Quel quantième avons-nous (sommes-nous)?** | What is the day of the month? |
| **Quel âge a-t-il?—Il a dix ans.** | How old is he?—He is ten. |
| **Plus âgé de trois ans.** | Three years older. |
| **Il a passé la cinquantaine.** | He is past fifty. |
| **Cette chambre est longue de cinq mètres.** | This room is five metres long. |

| | |
|---|---|
| **Cette chambre a huit mètres de longueur sur six de largeur.** | This room is eight metres long by six wide. |
| **Il est midi.** | It is noon. |
| **Il est minuit.** | It is midnight. |

**17.** IDIOMATIC PHRASES.

| | |
|---|---|
| **Au courant de.** | Acquainted with, posted in, to know about. |
| **Mettre au courant de.** | To inform of, acquaint with. |

**Au fait de** and **mettre au fait de** are synonymous with **au courant de** and **mettre au courant de.**

## EXERCISE III

### 1

1. He is wearing a black tie. 2. Once one is one. 3. Asia is much larger than Europe. 4. Wellington was a great English general. 5. We hope to arrive in France on June 16th. 6. Frederick II and Napoleon I are the greatest generals of modern times. 7. She has white hands. 8. It is now just six o'clock. 9. Soldiers lead a hard life. 10. This house is ninety feet long by sixty feet wide. 11. I am reading a piece of poetry full of brilliant thoughts. 12. His dearest friends have condemned him. 13. This piece of news is not true. 14. In that town there are two castles, the old and the new. 15. I am acquainted with him; he is the best man in the world. 16. Nero was a cruel emperor. 17. Diogenes walked barefoot, and slept in a tub. 18. The road is slippery to-day. 19. A secret joy is almost never a perfect joy. 20. He explained himself in very clear terms. 21. His whole book is filled with commonplaces. 22. She has eaten all the jam. 23. Mutual esteem is the first foundation of friendship. 24. Don't you know how (*savoir*) to swim? 25. He knows about the matter; my friend informs him of everything.

### 2

1. What time is it?—It is past two o'clock. 2. The laws of Draco were most (*très*) severe. 3. This little girl has light auburn hair. 4. They lunch at noon. 5. Do you know where Mr. Brunot lives? I know his father very well. 6. He sold the most precious thing he

had (that which he had of most precious). 7. He is a man who hasn't common sense. 8. That's the best place for this picture. 9. He is quite new at that business. 10. Scarron excelled in burlesque style. 11. Public good is preferable to private interest. 12. We must be polite to everybody. 13. This clock does not strike the half-hours. 14. She was standing with bowed head and clasped hands. 15. Numeral adjectives are divided (*se diviser*) into cardinals and ordinals. 16. When does the express for (*de*) Marseilles start?—At five in the afternoon, sir. 17. Most girls like silk dresses, but many have to do without them. 18. Do you know at what time the play begins? 19. Can we get (future of *avoir*) good places for three francs? 20. You ought to be posted in those things. 21. What good coffee! What good bread! 22. I wish you good night. 23. He is friendless. 24. The late queen spent several years in Germany. 25. All of us except the ladies will visit you to-morrow. 26. Do you know the novels of Balzac? 27. Come early, otherwise there will not be time for our game.

3

1. There is an immense space between the earth and the fixed stars. 2. The most loyal judges cannot be impartial in all cases. 3. How much is this book? 4. It is ten francs, but if you pay cash, I will give you a discount of ten per cent. 5. This woman has two daughters and two sons, very well brought up. 6. This lady wears a white dress and [a white] hat. 7. It is useless to give him good advice; he never pays any attention to what you say. 8. The late queen distributed alms every day. 9. This writer always uses expressive words. 10. You have come too early, come again in half an hour. 11. Out of (*sur*) a hundred persons there are ninety who sacrifice the future for the present. 12. High mass lasted more than four hours. 13. How much are the oranges, if you please, madam?—They are three cents a piece, sir. 14. He was very much afraid, and so was I. 15. Life is but continued labor and occupation. 16. My father has just bought a round table. 17. Nowadays a man seldom (*ne . . . guère*) lives more than eighty years. 18. Is the admission free to-day?—Yes, and there will no doubt be many people there. 19. It is very comfortable in the second gallery. 20. The poor fellow hasn't long to live; he

has been sick for two months. 21. It is a mean man who will speak ill of his friend. 22. I am going to change my coat; I do not like the one I have on at present. 23. I used to know Mr. Cornaz very well; he was one of the best students at the university. He not only knew his lessons, but kept himself informed (*se tenir au courant*) of all that was going on.

## LESSON IV

### PERSONAL PRONOUNS

**18.** The following table shows the forms and principal uses of the personal pronouns:

| | CONJUNCTIVES. | | | DISJUNCTIVES. |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| | Subject. | Direct object. | Indirect object. | All cases. |
| First person singular | **je** | **me** | **me** | **moi** |
| Second person singular | **tu** | **te** | **te** | **toi** |
| Third person singular | **il** | **le, se** | **lui, se** | **lui, soi** |
| | **elle** | **la, se** | **lui, se** | **elle, soi** |
| First person plural | **nous** | **nous** | **nous** | **nous** |
| Second person plural | **vous** | **vous** | **vous** | **vous** |
| Third person plural | **ils** | **les, se** | **leur,** | **eux** |
| | **elles** | **les, se** | **leur, se** | **elles** |

**19.** 1. The personal pronouns are either conjunctive or disjunctive. The conjunctive personal pronouns are immediately connected with a verb either as subject or as direct or indirect object:

**Il ne me le donne pas.** He does not give it to me.

2. In other cases the disjunctive forms must be used:

**Qui est allé chez lui?—Moi.** Who went to his house?—I.
**Lui seul est venu.** He alone came.

*Note.*—For the position of subject pronouns see §§ 87–92.

## POSITION OF CONJUNCTIVE OBJECT PRONOUNS

**20.** Object pronouns, including **en** and **y**, immediately precede the verb, except when the verb is in the imperative affirmative. The following table will show the order:

| Subject. | First part of negative. | Direct or indirect object. | Direct object. | Indirect object. | Indirect object. | Indirect object. | Verb. | Second part of negative. | Adverb. | Past participle. |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| **je**. . . . . . . . . . . | **ne** | **me** | **le** | **lui** | **y** | **en** | | **pas** | | |
| **tu** . . . . . . . . . . | | **te** | **la** | **leur** | | | | **point** | | |
| **il, elle** . . . . . . . . | | **se** | **les** | | | | | | | |
| **nous**. . . . . . . . . . | | **nous** | | | | | | | | |
| **vous**. . . . . . . . . . | | **vous** | | | | | | | | |
| **ils, elles** . . . . . . | | **se** | | | | | | | | |

**21.** From the above table it should be noticed that when there are two object pronouns with one verb, one direct, the other indirect, a pronoun of the third person stands nearest the verb. This rule holds true whether the pronouns precede or follow the verb (see page 16). If they are both of the third person, the direct (except *se*) precedes the indirect.

**22.** Note that, in the following cases, the conjunctive form may not be used as indirect object, but is replaced by **à** + a disjunctive form:

1. For the sake of emphasis, or when two indirect objects are joined by a conjunction:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Je ne le dirai pas à vous.** | I shall not tell it to *you*. |
| **Il parle à lui et à moi.** | He speaks to him and to me. |

2. When the conjunctive direct object is any other pronoun than **le, la, les**:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Je vous présenterai à elle.** | I shall introduce you to her. |

3. After some verbs denoting physical or mental direction:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Il courut à moi.** | He ran to me. |

But, in a figurative sense, **Il lui vint une idée,** An idea occurred to him.

**23.** With the imperative affirmative the object pronouns come after the verb, the order being as follows:

| Verb. | Direct object. | Direct or indirect object. | Indirect object. | Indirect object. | Adverb. |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| | **le** | **moi, m'** | **y** | **en** | |
| | **la** | **toi, t'** | | | |
| | **les** | **lui** | | | |
| | | **nous** | | | |
| | | **vous** | | | |
| | | **leur** | | | |

**24.** When **faire, laisser,** and verbs of perceiving **(voir, entendre,** etc.) have a dependent infinitive the object pronouns are placed with the finite verb (see also § 144):

| | |
|---|---|
| **Je le lui ferai écrire.** | I shall make him write it. |
| **Faites-le entrer.** | Have him enter. |

**25.** As predicate, the pronoun of the third person **(le, la, les)** is:

1. Variable when it represents a noun or an adjective used substantively:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Êtes-vous la malade?—Je la suis.** | Are you the patient?—I am. |
| **La reine, je la suis.** | The queen, I am she. |

2. Invariable, if the reference is to an adjective, to a noun used adjectively, or to a clause:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Êtes-vous malade?—Je le suis.** | Are you ill?—I am. |
| **Ils ne sont pas ici, je le vois.** | They are not here, I see. |
| **Sont-ils Français?—Ils le sont.** | Are they French?—They are. |

Note also the following use of **le**:

| | |
|---|---|
| **J'irai, s'il le faut.** | I shall go, if it is necessary. |
| **Il l'a emporté sur ses ennemis.** | He was victorious over his enemies. |

**26.** Idiomatic Phrases.

| | |
|---|---|
| **En passer par là.** | To submit to it. |
| **Passer chez.** | To call upon, at. |
| **Se passer de.** | To do without, to dispense with. |
| **J'en doute.** | I doubt it. |
| **Je m'en doute.** | I suspect it. |

## Exercise IV

1

1. I promise to write to you. 2. Are you happy?—Yes, sir, we are. 3. It was she, I am sure of it. 4. I saw your sisters just now; their governess was with them. 5. I shall go and see (*aller voir*) you before I start. 6. What are you doing here? You are wanted; they cannot do without you. 7. He treats me as if I were his valet. 8. Make him speak. 9. I wish to see you presently. 10. Tell me if he comes. 11. It was he who gave it to me. 12. You have the paper; give it to me. 13. The thing depends on you. 14. I see him writing. 15. The sentinel would not let him pass. 16. He will go to see you after the middle of August (*mi-août, f.*). 17. You must not think of him any longer. 18. I saw him this morning, but I did not speak to him. 19. They have just made me several propositions. 20. Call at John's this afternoon; he would like to see you. 21. Are they your brothers?—Yes, they are. 22. He will give you the book to-morrow, I assure you.

2

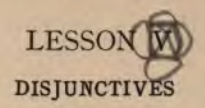
1. Is that your pen?—Yes, that is mine which you have in your hand. 2. Are you ill?—Yes, I am.—I suspected it as soon as I saw you. 3. Are you a governess?—Yes, sir, I am. 4. It is a weakness to be too much dissatisfied with oneself. 5. I have let them take it, I can easily do without it. 6. It is of no use for him to speak; no one is foolish enough to believe him. 7. He did not hear you call him.

8. Come and see me on your way back. 9. We shall have to submit to it. 10. He wanted to persuade me of it (direct object). 11. Are you the patient (f.) for whom I was called?—I am. 12. I have just heard them cry. 13. We shall go to see him to-morrow if the weather is fine. 14. Are you bringing me any books?—Yes, sir; I bring you the two which I do not need myself. 15. He began to write early this morning. 16. I had promised to get this place for him, but he does not deserve it. 17. They are not skilful yet, but they will soon become so. 18. I have seen you speak to him. 19. One evening, as I arrived, the child came to me quite put out. 20. Are those your books?—Yes, they are.—I doubt it. 21. There he is outside; have him come in. 22. Are you the governess of these children?—No, sir, I am not. 23. Do you often go to New York?—Yes, I go there very often, as I have business there. 24. Let me see, where did we leave off? I have forgotten. 25. My friends who quarrelled yesterday, have made up.

3

1. If the public is indulgent toward me (say: has any indulgence for me), I owe it to your protection. 2. Be good!—Why, am I not always so?—Oh yes, you are (*si fait*). 3. I cannot do without you; you will have to stop in on the way back. 4. He who is everybody's friend, is nobody's friend (use *le*). 5. He came to get (*prendre*) me to go to the theater. 6. I have let them take it. 7. I like to be treated (*on* construction) in that way. 8. Do you think of him often?—Yes, sir, I do. 9. How will you go about it? 10. I shall have to submit to it although I am sure he is not right. 11. When there is enough (*en*) for three there is enough for four. 12. If he has given you his confidence, you owe it to your good conduct. 13. Are you the three men chosen for the combat?—We are. 14. I did not have a cold all winter, but I have had one since the hot weather [set in]. 15. We enjoyed ourselves very much at the theater last evening; they played Molière's *The Imaginary Invalid*. 16. I am not sure, but I think Mr. A. is in; he seldom goes out before dinner. 17. John expects to be at home all day to-morrow. 18. If you don't be quiet, I'll make you; do you understand? 19. When you write home, please remember me to everybody.

20. Are you going away so soon? Take care of yourself and write to me as soon as you can. 21. Why is he angry with me? I have not done anything to him; I am sorry, but I can't help it. 22. Please lend me your pencil.—Why do you want it? You have one already. 23. Do you really need it?—Yes, I can't get along without it, mine has no point.



## LESSON V

### DISJUNCTIVES

**27.** The disjunctive forms of the personal pronoun are used:

1. After prepositions:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Pour moi, je m'en vais avec lui.** | As for me, I am going off with him. |

2. Absolutely, when the verb is to be implied from the context:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Qui est allé ?—Moi.** | Who went?—I. |

3. As predicate nominative after **c'est**, **ce sont**:

| | |
|---|---|
| **C'est moi. Ce sont eux.** | It is I. It is they. |

4. In apposition with, or in place of, a conjunctive pronoun, usually for the sake of emphasis:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Toi, tu travailles, et moi, je joue.** | *You* are working, and *I* am playing. |
| **Lui aussi est venu.** | He too came. |

5. As compound subject or object:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Lui et elle (ils) sont venus.** | He and she came. |
| **Je connais lui et elle.** | I am acquainted with him and with her. |

6. To form compounds with **même**, for the sake of additional emphasis:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Il me l'a dit lui-même.** | He told me so himself. |
| **Il ne faut pas toujours penser à soi-même.** | One must not always think of oneself. |

*Note.*—The disjunctive forms **moi** and **toi** are used instead of **me** and **te** after a verb in the imperative affirmative, except with **en** and **y**.

| | |
|---|---|
| **Donnez-les-moi.** | Give them to me. |
| **Donnez-m'en.** | Give me some. |

## REFLEXIVES

**28.** The ordinary forms of the personal pronouns are used for the reflexive of the first and second persons, while for the third person **se** is used for both singular and plural:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Il (elle) se flatte.** | He (she) flatters himself (herself). |
| **Je me flatte.** | I flatter myself. |

*Note.*—The disjunctive form **soi** is rarely used except in the singular in an indefinite or general statement:

| | | |
|---|---|---|
| | **Chacun pense à soi.** | Everybody thinks of himself. |
| | **On doit parler rarement de soi.** | One should rarely speak of oneself. |
| *But,* | **Il ne songe qu'à lui.** | He thinks only of himself. |

## EN and Y

**29. En** represents **de** + a pronoun of the third person. It is used of things, and sometimes of persons. Frequently **en** cannot be translated into English:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Vous en êtes sûr?** | You are sure of it? |
| **Voici des pommes; en voulez-vous?** | Here are some apples; do you wish some? |

*Note.*—Sometimes it takes the place of a possessive adjective:

| | |
|---|---|
| **J'aime les fleurs; j'en admire la beauté.** | I love flowers; I admire their beauty. |

**30. Y** represents **à** (**en**, **dans**, etc.) + a pronoun of the third person. It is used of things, rarely of persons:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Est-elle en Amérique?—Non, elle n'y est pas.** | Is she in America?—No, she is not. |
| **Va-t-elle à Paris?—Oui elle y va.** | Is she going to Paris?—Yes, she is. |

**31.** IDIOMATIC PHRASES WITH **en** AND **y**.

| | |
|---|---|
| **Ils en vinrent aux mains.** | They came to blows. |
| **Je n'en puis plus.** | I am exhausted. |
| **C'en est fait de lui.** | It is all over with him. |
| **Il en veut à son ami.** | He is angry with (has a grudge against) his friend. |
| | To stop, leave off. |
| | His life is at stake. |

| | |
|---|---|
| **Ça y est.** | That's it. |
| **J'y suis, y êtes-vous?** | I understand, do you? |
| **Ça n'y est pour rien.** | That has nothing to do with it. |
| **Il n'y a pas de quoi.** | Don't mention it. |
| **Voyons un peu s'il en est ainsi.** | Just let us see if it is so. |
| **Voyez où j'en serais, si elle allait croire cela.** | See what a situation I should be in, if she were to believe that. |

## EXERCISE V

1

1. They too have seen us, they and their cousin. 2. He alone has come; his friend remained at home. 3. He is just as rich as you; he and his brother have made a great deal of money. 4. She said so herself, and she must know. 5. Every one works for himself. 6. He introduced me to him. 7. This man works for himself. 8. Have you been in America?—No, sir, I have not. 9. Have you any money? No, sir, I have not. 10. Are you bringing me some books?—Yes, sir, I bring you two. 11. Do you remember his name?—Yes, sir, I remember it well. 12. As for me, I should prefer to do without it (*s'en passer*). 13. Who came with you?—He and his brother. 14. You believe it, you say; *I* do not believe it. 15. She seems to be angry.—She? She is so good-natured! 16. There was a big fire yesterday. 17. Where did we leave off? 18. I have worked too [hard], I am exhausted. 19. My brother is two years older than I am. 20. Who went to church yesterday?—I [did]; I go almost every Sunday. 21. Why are you angry with your brother? 22. I understand it now, but it is a difficult sentence. 23. I see that I can't do without my dictionary.

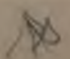
2

1. Are you speaking about his misfortune?—No, sir, I am not; that has nothing to do with it. 2. This horse is vicious; you must dispose of him. 3. It is fine to conquer oneself. 4. Have you any matches?—I have some; how many do you want? 5. What do you think of this dictionary? It seems to me to be very good. 6. There isn't a word of truth in what he says. 7. All those who travel in Switzerland admire its picturesque scenery. 8. Why do you not explain yourself to him? If you don't he will continue to have a grudge against you. 9. I should like very much to know what you think about it. 10. Are

you speaking of the soldiers?—Yes, sir, we are speaking of them. 11. He is in a position to do it as well as you. 12. Why didn't you tell me that sooner? I did not know that his entire fortune was at stake. 13. If you do it you will repent of it. 14. I am ashamed to tell you so. 15. As for me I am very hungry. 16. What is it you say?—Oh, at last I understand; you mean to say that he alone knows what he is doing. 17. We should not be angry even with our enemies. 18. I have had no news of him for two days, and I am very much distressed, because the doctor promised to keep me informed about his illness. 19. Don't worry, I do not doubt that you will hear from him soon. By the way, when does the postman come here? 20. Do you understand now? No, I can't guess what you mean.

3

1. Lesage did not belong (*être*) to the Academy and did not seek to belong to it. 2. Tell him to come down as soon as he has finished. 3. I have more than three hundred like that, added the officer, still smiling. 4. I think I have heard him say something about it. 5. You accuse me of having told what passed between you and me, and you tell me that the affair is known. 6. I thought of her first, it was my duty; of myself next, it was my right. 7. Don't ask me anything more about it, and do not give me cause to repent of what I have just done. 8. I have not told you anything about the road from Aix-la-Chapelle to Cologne; there is not very much to be said about it. 9. We almost came to blows, my honor was at stake and I had to avenge myself. 10. So much evil has been said of this man and I see so little evil (*en*) in him. 11. As for you, you appear to me to be a fine fellow; I have confidence in you. 12. It is easier to be wise for others than to be wise for oneself. 13. His life is at stake, he should consult a doctor at once. 14. He has a grudge against me; I am a foreigner; it's all over with me if I stay here. 15. Most people like to talk about themselves, and still everybody agrees that one should seldom speak of oneself. 16. Don't you remember the fun we used to have in the country? 17. I broke my arm some months ago, but I can use it now without difficulty. 18. Why are those ladies standing? Please go and ask them to be seated.



# LESSON VI

## RELATIVE PRONOUNS

**32.** The following table will indicate the forms and principal uses of the relative pronouns:

| | Used of persons. | Used of things. |
|---|---|---|
| As subject...... | **qui, lequel,** who | **qui, lequel,** which, that |
| As object....... | **que, lequel,** whom | **que, lequel,** which, that |
| With preposition.. | **qui, lequel,** whom | **lequel,** which<br>**quoi,** what, used indefinitely, see below |

To the above list should be added **dont** (see § 41) and **où** (see § 39).

**33.** Distinguish carefully between **qui**, which is used as the subject, and **que**, which is used as the object of a verb.

**34.** **Lequel** is inflected as follows: Sing.: **lequel**, *m.*, **laquelle**, *f.*; Plural: **lesquels**, *m.*, **lesquelles**, *f.*

It will be noticed that **lequel** may serve in any construction; generally, however, it is used only:

1. After a preposition, referring to things:

| | |
|---|---|
| **La maison de laquelle vous parlez.** | The house of which you speak. |

2. In cases where **qui** or **que**, which are not inflected, would be ambiguous:

| | |
|---|---|
| **L'ami de ma sœur, lequel est venu hier, est encore ici.** | My sister's friend, who came yesterday, is still here. |

**35.** **Lequel**, and not **qui**, is used after the prepositions **parmi** and **entre**, when referring to persons; but **qui**, and not **lequel**, must be used after **en**:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Les hommes parmi lesquels vous vivez.** | The men among whom you live. |
| **Des hommes en qui je crois.** | Men in whom I believe. |

**36.** Relative pronouns, whether inflected or not, have the gender and number of their antecedent:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Nous qui sommes ici.** | We who are here. |

**37.** Relatives must not be omitted in French:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Le livre que j'ai.** | The book I have. |

**38. Que** may be used also as a predicate nominative:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Aveugle que j'étais.** | Blind as I was. |

**39. Où, d'où, par où** are often used in place of a preposition + **lequel**:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Les endroits par où nous passons.** | The places through which we pass. |
| **Le village où je demeure.** | The village in which I live. |
| **Un procès d'où dépend ma fortune.** | A lawsuit on which my fortune depends. |

**40. Quoi**, 'what', is generally used after prepositions, and refers to an indefinite antecedent:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Voilà de quoi je voulais parler.** | That is what I wanted to speak about. |
| **Je n'ai pas de quoi vivre.** | I haven't enough to live on. |

Note that 'what' (=that which) is rendered in French by **ce** + a relative pronoun:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Ce qui n'est pas clair n'est pas français.** | What is not clear is not French. |

**41. Dont**, 'whose', 'of whom', 'of which', etc., is used in place of **de** + a relative; a noun after **dont**, 'whose', retains its article, and, in case it is the object of a verb, it is placed after the verb:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Une entreprise dont le succès n'est pas douteux.** | An enterprise whose success is not doubtful. |
| **Les chevaux dont on vantait la vitesse.** | The horses whose speed they praised. |
| **La maison dont je vois le toit.** | The house whose roof I see. |

Note that 'whose', etc., must be translated by **duquel (de laquelle** etc.) and not **dont** when it depends upon a noun governed by a preposition.

| | |
|---|---|
| **Une entreprise au succès de la*quelle je ne puis* croire.** | An enterprise in whose success I cannot believe. |

**42.** IDIOMATIC PHRASES.

| | |
|---|---|
| **N'avoir garde de.** | To be far from, to take good care not to, to have no wish to. |
| **Il a je ne sais quoi de noble.** | He has something noble about him. |

## EXERCISE VI

1

1. What you say is not true, he has enough to live on. 2. I do not understand what you are saying. 3. Tell me what is tormenting you. 4. There is the house I live in; there is (it has) something or other gloomy about it. 5. This is the gentleman whose son came to see me yesterday. 6. What do you mean? 7. Where is the gentleman whom we saw day before yesterday? 8. Have you seen the cows that I bought? 9. I do what I please. 10. You see now what we are. 11. My son does what I tell him; I can't do without him. 12. The gentleman with whom I traveled is ill. 13. He doesn't know what to say. 14. Where is the paper that I bought? 15. What I have just told you is not true; his life is not at stake. 16. There is the shop in which I bought my gloves. 17. God has created everything that exists. 18. The picture that I was speaking of was sold for three thousand francs. 19. He promises all that you wish. 20. What I desire is to see you succeed. 21. Have the kindness to send me what I asked you for. 22. He did not obtain what he asked for. 23. To-day you know who I am and I know who you are. 24. Take good care not to tell him.

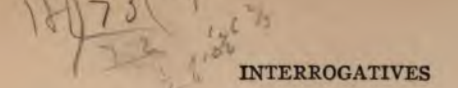
2

1. Tell me who you are, you who are speaking thus. 2. This is the man whom we were talking about last evening, there is something interesting about him. 3. All the travelers spoke of that country's fertility, which is really extraordinary. 4. The matter which I was conversing with you about just now is very important. 5. I began to read in that book a story which interested me very much. 6. All that you see is mine. 7. I did all that I had intended to do. 8. She was astonished at what she had done, and she repented of it. 9.

hasn't done anything of what I told him to do. 10. These are matters I take interest in. 11. The streets I passed through were very clean. 12. I beg your pardon; it is I who was mistaken.—Don't mention it. 13. The man for whom I work is very severe. 14. The man I am speaking of has just left. 15. I know very well that there is nothing more difficult than that which I am undertaking. 16. Ennui is a disease whose cure is work. 17. That's what he is always talking about. 18. He hopes to win the lawsuit on which his fortune depends; his honor too is at stake. 19. This is the house which my father has just bought. 20. He was a judge whose decisions were always respected. 21. That is exactly what I did not want. 22. The children to whose mother I wrote are very poor.

3

1. It is an undertaking in the success of which no one believes. 2. By the way that you have spoken, I see that you are in (have) great need of being enlightened. 3. He was one of those men who seek everywhere to profit by circumstances which may be favorable to their interests. 4. What one has is worth more than what one hopes [for]. 5. The man for whose house I offered a high price has just left for America. 6. My friend with whom I formerly passed all my evenings has lost his wife. 7. Patience! we have not finished; there is enough (*de quoi*) to satisfy you. 8. They were not astonished at the enormous quantity of water to be taken by the Espérance, which according to her papers was going only to Senegal. 9. Can you guess what he is thinking about? 10. I have enjoyed all the pleasure that vengeance can give. 11. An Arabian proverb says: The word which I have not spoken is my slave; the one which I have pronounced is my master. 12. He is an agreeable man with whom one is always at ease. 13. Often we are unhappy only because we think less about what we have than about what we have not. 14. I see in the distance an object whose form I cannot well distinguish. 15. If they had had enough (*de quoi*) to buy a new boat with, they might have built up their trade. 16. I beg your pardon, I did not know you were there.—Don't mention it. 17. What I mean is that the way in which he has conducted his affairs is not above reproach. 18. At





all events that is a thing which no one would be ashamed of. 19. That is just what I expected; here is a letter which says that he has lost all his money in that speculation.



# LESSON VII

## INTERROGATIVES

### INTERROGATIVE PRONOUNS

**43.** The following table shows the forms and principal uses of the interrogative pronouns:

| | Used of Persons. | Used of Things. |
|---|---|---|
| As subject | **qui,** who<br>**lequel,** which one | **qui,** what—*rare, with transitives*<br>**que,** what, *with intransitives*<br>**lequel,** which one |
| As object | **qui,** whom<br>**lequel,** which one | **que,** what<br>**lequel,** which one |
| With prepositions | **qui,** whom<br>**lequel,** which one | **quoi,** what—*also used absolutely*<br>**lequel,** which one |

**44. Lequel** (**laquelle, lesquels, lesquelles,** 'which one', etc.) is used in any construction of both persons and things:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Voici deux livres, lequel voulez-vous ?** | Here are two books, which one do you wish? |
| **Laquelle des deux femmes ?** | Which one of the two women? |

**45.** In direct questions **qui** may be replaced by **qui est-ce qui**, as subject, and **qui est-ce que**, as object:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Qui est-ce qui vient ?** | Who is coming? |
| **Qui est-ce que vous avez vu ?** | Whom did you see? |

**46. Que** is conjunctive; it is used, in direct questions only:

1. As direct object:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Que dites-vous ?** | What do you say? |

2. As subject or predicate nominative with intransitive verbs:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Que sont-ils devenus ?** | What has become of them ? |
| **Que vous en semble ?** | What do you think of it? |

**47. Que** is usually replaced by **qu'est-ce qui**, as subject, and **qu'est-ce que**, as object, and, in indirect questions, by **ce qui** and **ce que**:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Qu'est-ce qui vous rend malade?** | What makes you sick ? |
| **J'ignore ce que vous blâmez.** | I don't know what you are finding fault with. |
| **Dites-moi ce que vous pensez.** | Tell me what you think. |

**48. Que** is used also as an exclamatory or interrogative adverb:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Que je suis content!** | How happy I am! |
| **Que parlez-vous si haut ?** | Why do you speak so loud? |

**49. Quoi** is disjunctive; it is used after prepositions and absolutely (i.e. when the verb is omitted) in exclamation and interrogation:

| | |
|---|---|
| **A quoi pensez-vous ?** | Of what are you thinking ? |
| **Quoi de plus beau ?** | What more beautiful ? |
| **Je ne sais quoi.** | I don't know what. |

### Interrogative Adjectives

**50.**

| | | |
|---|---|---|
| Sing. | **quel, m.** | **quelle, f.** |
| Plural | **quels, m.** | **quelles, f.** |

**51.** The interrogative adjective **quel**, etc., 'which', 'what', agrees with its noun in gender and number:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Quel service as-tu rendu?** | What service have you rendered? |
| **Quelle est la capitale de la Russie?** | What is the capital of Russia ? |

*Note.*-- **Quel** may also be used in exclamations, **'what'! 'what a'!**

| | |
|---|---|
| **Quel animal!** | What a beast! |
| **Quelle confession!** | What a confession! |
| **Quel beau garçon!** | What a beautiful boy! |

**52.** IDIOMATIC PHRASES.

| | |
|---|---|
| **On peut faire ce voyage en deux heures.** | That trip can be made in two hours. |
| **Je partirai dans deux heures.** | I shall leave in (at the expiration of) two hours. |
| **D'aujourd'hui en huit.** | This day week, a week from to-day. |
| **En honnête homme.** | Like (as) an honest man. |
| **Tant soit peu.** | Ever so little, just a little. |

## EXERCISE VII

1

1. What time is it? 2. Whose son was Alexander? 3. What is that called in French? 4. What are you thinking of? 5. Who told you that? 6. If he had ever so little courage he would do it. 7. What has happened? 8. What are you talking about? 9. What does this word mean? 10. To whom have I the honor of speaking? 11. What flower is this? 12. He acts like an honest man. 13. What are you doing? 14. What do you want with me? 15. I ask what astonishes you. 16. He read the book in two hours. 17. What is distressing you? Tell me frankly. 18. Which of those two pictures do you prefer? 19. I don't know who has told me that. 20. Who's there? Who is knocking? 21. From whom do you get that [piece of] news? 22. What are you busy with? 23. What are you thinking of doing? 24. The marriage will take place this day week. 25. What has become of them? I saw them yesterday. 26. Which hat are you going to wear to-day? 27. At what time are you going to leave?—In two hours. 28. Do you know what the capital of Spain is? 29. What a beautiful dog! When did you buy it?

2

1. Where is the museum they (*on*) talk so much about? 2. In what battle was Francis I made prisoner? 3. What has happened to you in my absence? 4. What has become of your dreams of former days? 5. I did it in two hours. 6. How can we aid those people if they will not work? 7. Tell me whom you associate with, and I will tell you who you are. 8. You leave a week from to-day, do you not? Where

are you going to spend the winter? 9. What will Europe be in a hundred years? 10. You ask for my sister, which one? 11. What [is] more sad than this event? 12. Tell me in what I can be of service to you. 13. Which one of these sailors saved him? 14. You do not know yet what life is. 15. I am not acquainted with him, but he acts like a good man (*homme de bien*). 16. I want to know whom you prefer. 17. Do you know the woman with whose son I came? 18. In what condition are the things? 19. What is the difficulty that stops you? 20. How unhappy I am! What will become of me? 21. What answer did they give you? 22. He who serves his country well has no need of ancestors. 23. Will you have some water? —Give me just a little, please. 24. For whom are you amassing so much money? 25. At what hour do you dine?—We dine in one hour. 26. I don't know of what I am accused. 27. To whom were you speaking when I arrived? 28. How is the weather?—It is fine.

3

1. Can you tell me where Napoleon was born?—At Ajaccio.—And when was he born, in what year?—In seventeen hundred and sixty-nine.—Where did you learn that? 2. Whom do you take me for, sir? 3. I have something here, guess what. 4. A week from to-day we shall hope to see you back (*de retour*). 5. You can tell by his accent what province he comes from. 6. Which of your two friends are you thinking of going to see? 7. You must not put faith in everything you hear said. 8. Do you want me to teach you logic?—What is this logic you speak of? 9. Who knows what this boy may undertake some day? 10. How difficult it is to be satisfied with any one! 11. By which of the two roads shall we go? 12. I don't know what to think of it. 13. He doesn't know what to say or what to do. 14. What does that matter to me? 15. What is the (*Qu'est-il*) need of so many words? I am going to leave in two hours. 16. Where are you taking these men and women? 17. What can he want with (*de*) me? 18. How long it is since (*Que de temps que . . . ne*) we saw each other! 19. Which one of these books pleases you best? 20. What [is] more unfortunate than his plight! 21. There is some- *in this affair* which I do not understand. 22. He is

just a little vexed; I am going to try to console him. 23. Which dog bit you, the big one or the little one?

# LESSON VIII

## POSSESSIVES

### I

**53.** Possessive Adjectives.

| Masculine singular. | Feminine singular. | Masculine and feminine plural. |
|---|---|---|
| **mon** | **ma** | **mes** |
| **ton** | **ta** | **tes** |
| **son** | **sa** | **ses** |
| **notre** | **notre** | **nos** |
| **votre** | **votre** | **vos** |
| **leur** | **leur** | **leurs** |

**54.** A possessive adjective agrees in gender and number with the noun it modifies, but in person with the possessor. Accordingly **son, sa, ses** are sometimes ambiguous and must be translated according to the context. To avoid ambiguity **à** + a pronoun or noun may be used:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Il a son livre.** | He has his (her) book. |
| **Il a son livre à elle.** | He has her book. |

**55.** The masculine forms (**mon, ton, son**) are used before feminine nouns beginning with a vowel or mute **h**:

**Mon amie; son histoire.** My friend; his (her) history.

**56.** The possessive adjective must, like the definite article, be repeated before each noun it qualifies:

**Mon livre et ma plume.** My book and pen.

**57.** When not emphatic, and when no ambiguity can arise, the definite article is often used instead of the possessive adjective, with or without an indirect object-pronoun placed before the verb. This is particularly the case when referring to parts of the body:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Fermez les yeux.** | Shut your eyes. |
| **Elle s'est cassé le bras.** | She has broken her arm. |
| **Il mit la main dans la poche.** | He put his hand into his pocket. |

**58.** The possessive is often used in addressing a relative, a superior officer, etc.:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Que fais-tu, mon père?** | What are you doing, father? |
| **Oui, mon général.** | Yes, general. |

Cf. also: **Madame votre mère,** Your mother.

**59.** For the sake of emphasis ('own', in English) the possessive is sometimes expressed by **à** + a pronoun, or by the addition of **propre** after the possessive adjective:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Son fils à lui.** | *His* son. |
| **Mes propres mains.** | My own hands. |

**60.** The possessive adjective is sometimes replaced by **en** and the definite article, when referring to a noun in the preceding clause, and when the noun qualified by the possessive is subject or direct object of a verb or predicate nominative with **être** (see § 29):

| | |
|---|---|
| **Quand on est dans un pays, il faut en suivre l'usage.** | When one is in a country, it is necessary to follow its customs. |
| **Cette terre me plaît, le sol en est fertile.** | This country pleases me, its soil is fertile. |
| *But,* **Cette terre est magnifique, j'admire la fertilité de son sol.** | This country is magnificent; I admire the fertility of its soil. |

## II

### 61. Possessive Pronouns.

| Singular. | | Plural. | |
|---|---|---|---|
| Masculine. | Feminine. | Masculine. | Feminine. |
| le mien | la mienne | les miens | les miennes |
| le tien | la tienne | les tiens | les tiennes |
| le sien | la sienne | les siens | les siennes |
| le nôtre | la nôtre | les nôtres | les nôtres |
| le vôtre | la vôtre | les vôtres | les vôtres |
| le leur | la leur | les leurs | les leurs |

**62.** Possessive pronouns are used in place of a noun:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Ma maison et la tienne (la vôtre).** | My house and yours. |

**63.** After **être** the possessive pronoun is generally replaced by **à** + a disjunctive personal pronoun:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Ce livre est à moi** (*or, rarely*, **le mien**). | This book is mine. |
| **Ces gantes-là sont à elle.** | Those gloves are hers. |

### 64. Idiomatic Phrases.

| | |
|---|---|
| **Saluez-le de ma part.** | Give him my greetings. |
| **Je vais à sa rencontre.** | I am going to meet him. |
| **J'ai fait de mon mieux.** | I have done my best. |
| **Il fait (tout) son possible.** | He does his (very) best. |
| **Il n'est pas de mes amis.** | He is not a friend of mine. |
| **Un avocat de mes amis.** | A friend of mine who is a lawyer. |
| **Un ami à moi.** | A friend of mine. |
| X **Il a changé d'avis.** | He has changed his mind. |
| **Serez-vous des nôtres ce soir ?** | Will you join us this evening? |

## Exercise VIII

### 1

1. He loves his children, he refuses them nothing. 2. I found one of your books in my drawer. 3. William has gone to the country to see one of his friends. 4. Your business is mine. 5. His strength does not correspond to his zeal. 6. I like my house better than theirs. 7. Wise people keep their friends, fools lose theirs. 8. The sisters resemble their brothers. 9. His house is opposite mine. 10. The hen warms her chickens under her wings. 11. Are his father and his mother still living? 12. Send my horse back to me and I will send you yours. 13. It is your opinion, but it is not ours. 14. I have cut my fingers. 15. Your mother loves you with all her heart. 16. Success crowned their efforts. 17. I shall give you my address. 18. I have lost my pen-knife, lend me yours. 19. He has need of your assistance. 20. Is this book yours?—No, it is his or hers. 21. My hand trembled. 22. This tree has lost its leaves. 23. He has broken his leg. 24. My father, mother, brothers, and sisters are in the country. 25. Shut your eyes and I will give you what I have in my hand. 26. Yes, father, I studied my lesson to-day; I did my best. 27. He is coming to-morrow, and I am going to meet him.

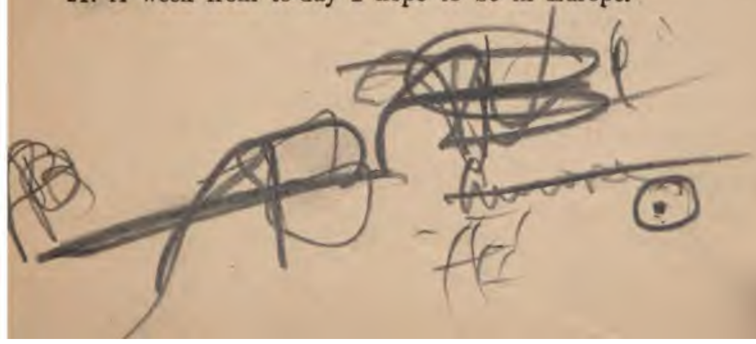
### 2

1. You will watch over your own interests, and I over mine. 2. I had my hair cut just now. 3. Children, put away your toys and books. 4. I saw your sisters; they were looking very well. 5. He was made to suffer great pain. 6. If summer has its pleasures, winter too has its [pleasures]. 7. He asked me to give you his greetings. 8. Your interests are ours. 9. I made him change his mind. 10. Your garden is as beautiful as his. 11. Gaiety is the health of the soul, sadness is its poison. 12. Learn that your duty does not depend on his. 13. Yes, Colonel, answered the old soldier, it was I who took this flag. 14. I have seen Rome and admired its beautiful monuments. 15. Baby is cutting (*faire*) his teeth. 16. The approach of night made him double his pace. 17. Is not that John's coat?—No, his is black. 18. He shook

hands with him. 19. How are you, cousin?—Very well, thank you. 20. Mr. Meyer is one of my husband's friends. 21. Show me what you have in your hand. 22. He sold his uncle's house and his own too. 23. To-day my arm hurts; yesterday I had a headache. 24. It is your shortest road. 25. This is a delicate matter; its success is doubtful. 26. I have not heard from him since he left. 27. I do not blame him if he has done his best.

3

1. He is full of consideration for me and mine. 2. I have often heard my father say so. 3. When you have told your reasons we shall tell ours. 4. My sister has been somewhat indisposed since Sunday. 5. How do you like (*trouver*) this country-house? Isn't its situation charming? 6. He has committed the fault; he will suffer the penalty for it. 7. You are stepping on my toes (*pieds*).—I beg your pardon. 8. I sent my two letters to this address. 9. While traveling in Italy he saw both the king and the pope. 10. It is on account of this that I have not granted his request. 11. The objects which I saw them take were on this table. 12. He raised his eyes to the ceiling as if to swear that he was not lying, the poor man! 13. Who is this gentleman?—He is a friend of mine who is a doctor. 14. I like this flower, its odor is very sweet. 15. Few people are strong enough to do without the help of their friends. 16. Here are two hats: this one is yours, that one is mine. 17. Mr. Blanc fell downstairs just now and broke his leg. 18. I'll not be with you (*des vôtres*) to-day. 19. I have already lived (*parcourir*) the greater part of my life; I know its promises, its realities, its disappointments. 20. He has changed his mind; he is not going to study French this semester. 21. A week from to-day I hope to be in Europe.



# LESSON IX

## DEMONSTRATIVES

### I

Wed Dec. 8

### Demonstrative Adjectives

**65.** The demonstrative adjective agrees in gender and number with the noun it modifies, and must be repeated before each noun modified.

**66.** Adjectival forms:

Singular: **ce, cet,** ***m.***; **cette,** ***f.*** Plural: **ces,** ***m. and f.***

*Note.*—**Cet** is used instead of **ce** before a word beginning with a vowel or mute **h**:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Cet argent; cet homme.** | This money; this man. |

**67.** For particular emphasis **-ci** or **-là** are added to the qualified noun; **-ci** for the thing nearer, **-là** for the thing farther removed:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Ce livre-ci; ce livre-là.** | *This* book; *that* book. |

**68.** The definite article is sometimes used instead of the demonstrative adjective:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Ne parlez pas de la sorte.** | Don't speak in that way. |

### II

### Demonstrative Pronouns

**69.** The demonstrative pronoun agrees in gender and number with the noun for which it stands.

**70.** Pronominal forms:

| | | | |
|---|---|---|---|
| Singular: | **celui, celui-ci, -là** | Plural: | **ceux, ceux-ci, -là** |
| | **celle, celle-ci, -là** | | **celles, celles-ci, -là** |
| | ***ceci, cela*** | | |

**71.** The forms **celui**, etc., are regularly used only:

1. As antecedents of a relative:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Celui qui est là.** | He who is there. |

2. Before a prepositional (especially **de**) phrase:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Mon livre et celui de mon frère.** | My book and my brother's. |

**72.** The forms **celui-ci**, **celui-là**, etc., are used in the sense of 'the latter', 'the former', to point out something as nearer or more remote:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Celui-là n'est pas si bon que celui-ci.** | That one is not so good as this one. |

**73.** The compounds **ceci**, 'this', and **cela**, 'that', are generally used without an expressed antecedent:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Prenez ceci, laissez cela.** | Take this, leave that. |

*Note.*—**Cela** may also refer to a preceding clause; **ceci** to a following:

| | |
|---|---|
| **N'oubliez pas ceci: Aide-toi, le ciel t'aidera.** | Do not forget this: Help yourself and Heaven will help you. |
| **L'orgueil est u grand défaut, retenez bien cela.** | Pride is a great fault, do not forget that. |

**74.** IDIOMATIC PHRASES.

| | |
|---|---|
| **Cela ne laisse pas d'être vrai.** | It is true for all that. |
| **Cela laisse à désirer.** | It is not (very) satisfactory. |

## EXERCISE IX

I

1. That man knows what he wants. 2. That pear is not ripe, it is green. 3. How much does that cost?—It costs a thousand francs. 4. Is that the boy who is looking for a place? 5. [Good-by] till this evening. 6. Which woman, this one or that? 7. No one is so deaf as (*il n'y a pire sourd que*) he who will not hear. 8. He who is not for me is against me. 9. This pencil is mine. 10. Among all these pictures that one is the most beautiful. 11. Take this orange,

it is larger than that one. 12. It froze last night. 13. You do not believe it, I know, but it is true for all that. 14. Of all his servants it is this one who is the most faithful. 15. Who is this beautiful woman? 16. Do you know that road? 17. This woman is prettier than that one. 18. Where did you find that? 19. It was that man who told me so. 20. My father is coming here one of these days. 21. Are those your gloves? 22. This wine comes from California, but it is not very satisfactory. 23. This is silk, that is wool. 24. What do you think of that? 25. This watch is fast, it is not a chronometer like that one. 26. He uses the same word too often.

2

1. Those who have suffered much have lived long (much). 2. He rewarded those of his servants who had served him well. 3. What day did that happen to you? 4. These little girls are the ones whom you met yesterday. 5. This street is the most beautiful, but those are longer. 6. That is what I wanted to speak to you about. 7. Do you know that man? He is a wealthy manufacturer. 8. I have only one desire: to be happy. 9. There are your letters, and here are those for your sister. 10. Does not that seem clear to you? 11. It is a handsome chair, perhaps, but it is not very satisfactory. 12. Move this table away from the window, please. 13. I do not consent to this arrangement. 14. Do not always say what you think, but never say what you do not believe. 15. I have invited my friends and those of my brother. 16. He is a good fellow, but he bores me for all that. 17. This picture pleases me more than that one. 18. I certainly ought to know that face. 19. Not this house, but that one, the one you see down there. 20. They are coming here one of these days, are they not? 21. He uses my horses almost every day; he is not well. 22. What is useful is not always right. 23. Remember this well: you must be just to everybody. 24. What you say frightens me. 25. Give me this, you may do what you please with that. 26. I have lost my apple.—That doesn't matter, we can buy some more.

3

1. An honest magistrate and a brave officer are equally estimable; the latter protects us against foreign enemies, the former makes

war upon enemies at home (*domestique*). 2. Love your neighbor as yourself; never forget that. 3. He is poor, but he is an honest man for all that. 4. Here is a letter which he wrote me in which he says that he wishes to buy the horse. 5. Tell me, who is the one you wish to avoid. 6. He is rich who receives more than he spends; he is poor whose expenses exceed his income. 7. He who exposes himself to a danger runs the risk of falling into it. 8. Your theme is not very satisfactory; your writing is not good either. 9. Sleep is sweet after work; the latter exhausts our strength, the former repairs it. 10. He likes physical exercises better than those of the mind. 11. There is no surer fact than this, that all men must die. 12. If you need that, make use of it. 13. When a thing was represented to Napoleon as impossible, he exclaimed that that word was not French. 14. You speak of this and that without paying attention (*trop penser*) to what you say. 15. I have seen this young lady somewhere, but I cannot remember where. 16. That will teach him to be more polite another time; he has what he deserves. 17. Do not talk about what does not concern you. 18. I have never read the book, but I have heard it spoken of several times. 19. They told me you were going; that is why I decided to go.

Wed Dec, 15

## LESSON X

### CE AND IL

**75. Ce** and **il** serve as the real or as the representative (grammatical) subject of **être** (or of **devoir, pouvoir, sembler** + **être**). Generally speaking **ce** is demonstrative; **il** is personal or impersonal.

**76. Ce** is the real subject when it is more or less emphatic, and might be replaced by **cela,** referring to some idea, clause, etc. Thus **ce** is employed when the complement of **être** is:

1. An adjective:

**C'est vrai; ce doit être vrai.** It (that) is true; it must be true.

2. A prepositional phrase, or clause introduced by a conjunction:

| | |
|---|---|
| **C'est de lui.** | It (that) is from him. |
| **C'est parce qu'il n'est pas là.** | It (that) is because he is not there. |

3. **à** + an infinitive:

| | |
|---|---|
| **C'est à faire.** | It (that) is to be done. |

4. An adjective + **à** + an infinitive:

| | |
|---|---|
| **C'est facile à faire.** | It (that) is easy to do. |

**77. Il**, as real subject, refers to some definite person or thing. It distinguishes gender and number (**il, elle, ils, elles**):

| | |
|---|---|
| **Il est venu me voir.** | He came to see me. |
| **Ils sont Français.** | They are French. |

**78. Ce** and **il** are used as representative or grammatical subjects:

**Ce** is used:

1. When the real (logical) subject is a pronoun, a proper noun, or a noun modified by an adjective:

**C'est moi,** It is I.
**Ce sont eux,** It is they.
**C'est un Français,** He is a Frenchman.
**C'est mon ami,** He is my friend.

2. When the real subject is an infinitive, or an infinitive preceded by **de**:

**Ce serait mentir,** That would be lying.
**C'est à vous de jouer,** It is your turn to play.

**Il** is used:

1. With impersonal verbs, or verbs used impersonally:

**Il pleut,** It rains.
**Il faut manger,** It is necessary to cat.

2. When **de** + an infinitive, or **à que** clause, follows a predicate adjective:

**Il est facile de faire cela,** It is easy to do that.
**Il est impossible d'être heureux sans la liberté,** It is impossible to be happ without liberty.

3. To anticipate a real subject introduced by **que**:

**C'est une belle chose que la vie,** Life is a fine thing.

4. Redundantly, to repeat the subject:

**Penser, c'est vivre,** To think is to live.

**L'État, c'est moi,** I am the state.

**Me dire cela, c'est m'offenser,** To tell me that is to offend me.

3. To anticipate a following statement:

**Il est évident que j'ai raison,** It is evident that I am right.

**Il est à désirer qu'il parte bientôt,** It is to be desired that he should leave soon.

4. In giving hours of the day:

**Il est midi,** It is noon.

**Il est trois heures,** It is three o'clock.

(*But,* **C'est une heure qui sonne,** It is one o'clock that is striking.)

**79.** Idiomatic Phrases.

| | |
|---|---|
| **Cela ne vaut pas la peine.** / **Ce n'est pas la peine.** | It isn't worth while. |
| **Donnez-vous la peine de vous asseoir.** | Please sit down. |
| **J'ai peine à croire cela.** | I can hardly believe it. |
| **C'est à peine si je vous ai vu.** | I hardly saw you. |
| **Vous me faites de la peine.** | You grieve me. |
| **Il est arrivé à force de patience.** | He succeeded by dint of patience. |
| **Qu'entendez-vous par là?** | What do you mean by that? |

## Exercise X

### I

1. There is no more wine. 2. Was it not you who said it? 3. It is raining; it is impossible to go out. 4. Is that your sister?—Yes, sir, it is. 5. It seems that everything goes well. 6. He is one of your friends. 7. To will is to be able. 8. It is he who told me so. 9. There is nothing astonishing in that. 10. It seems to me that you are jovial to-day. 11. It was a great loss. 12. He is a man who pleases all those who deal with him. 13. What he covets is your property. 14. It is a Frenchwoman. 15. Is she French? I can hardly believe it. 16. They are my sister's. 17. It is Thursday to-day. 18. The first masterpiece of Corneille was the Cid. 19. It

is midnight. 20. Is that your carriage?—Yes, it is; won't you take a seat in it? 21. It is they who have done it. 22. It is the law that demands it. 23. It is already eleven o'clock, it is time to go. 24. It doesn't matter at all. 25. That is understood (*s'entendre*). 26. He is not clever, but he succeeds by dint of [hard] work. 27. It is nearly noon, and I am hungry.

2

1. It is always easier to understand a language than to speak it. 2. What pleases me especially is your frankness. 3. My best friend is my cousin, I often hear from him. 4. All I know is that I know nothing. 5. To be content with one's lot is to be happy. 6. It is only too true. 7. Is it possible?—Why no, it is not possible; it is absolutely impossible. 8. Where is the bread?—There is no more (*en rester*). 9. What I desire is to see you succeed, but remember that you can succeed only by dint of [hard] work. 10. The genius of the French language is clearness and elegance. 11. It is lucky that it is not dark yet; I was told to come home early. 12. To speak to him in that way is not to encourage him to continue. 13. Are those your books?—Yes, they are, but please don't take that one, as I can't do without it. 14. It is well to know how to be silent. 15. It is eight o'clock; it is too late. 16. It is one of those blows that one cannot ward off. 17. I have an idea, but I shall not tell you what it is before to-morrow. 18. Isn't it your birthday to-day? 19. Let me see, what day of the month is it? 20. It is the twenty-first of January. 21. I am in such a hurry that I haven't time to sit down. 22. I can hardly believe that they have sold their house. 23. He said he was well acquainted with your friend; it is strange he should not know (subjunctive) you.

3

1. It is evident that it is true, but it is a painful surprise. 2. Is it dangerous to go there?—Yes, it is. 3. It's not his business whether I do that or not. 4. What time is it?—I am exceedingly sleepy. 5. It will soon be midnight; I shall have finished in a moment. 6. It was hardly possible that it should be otherwise. 7. The nature of the egotist is to be sufficient unto himself. 8. It is a pity that you didn't

tell me that sooner. 9. It is magnificent, said he, but it is not war. 10. It is true that there is in most things a mixture of truth and falsehood (*erreur*, f.). 11. Is he really dead, that dear friend! It grieves me to hear it. 12. It is not to Rome, devastated and disfigured, that one should go to study the customs of the Romans; it is to Pompeii. 13. Is that the house you spoke to me about? It is not worth while to buy such a house. 14. Unforeseen circumstances happen every day. 15. It was nothing but banquets, concerts, and balls all winter. 16. Is it the enemy that has been vanquished? 17. I am not well posted on that matter. 18. It is not worth while quarreling with him. 19. Is it to me you are speaking?—Speak lower, please. 20. Let us see what it is; isn't it beautiful! 21. I know that man; it is the same man who came yesterday. 22. What did you mean by coming so early?—No one is ready to go.

## LESSON XI

### INDEFINITES

**80.** A number of words which refer indefinitely to some person or thing are classed as *indefinites*; some of them are construed as adjectives only, and some as substantives only, while others have both uses. Only the following indefinites need special attention:

**81.** 1. **Quelque** (used as an adjective), 'some', 'a few':

| | |
|---|---|
| **Quelque jour; quelques hommes.** | Some day; a few men. |

2. Before numerals **quelque** is invariable and is used adverbially in the sense of 'about', 'some',

| | |
|---|---|
| **Quelque soixante ans.** | Some sixty years. |

3. Before adjectives or adverbs **quelque** means 'however':

| | |
|---|---|
| **Quelque méchants que soient les hommes.** | However wicked men may be. |

4. **Quelque(s) . . . que**+subjunctive, means 'whatever', 'however' . . . :

| | |
|---|---|
| **Quelques efforts que vous fassiez.** | Whatever efforts you may make. |

**82.** 1. **Tout, toute, tous, toutes** (used as an adjective or a pronoun), 'all', 'every', 'whole', 'any':

| | |
|---|---|
| **Toute ville.** | Every town. |
| **Toute la ville.** | All the town, the whole town. |
| **Tout le monde.** | Everybody. |
| **Tous les jours.** | Every day. |
| **Tous deux, tous les deux.** | Both. |

2. **Tout** is also used as an adverb meaning 'quite', 'wholly':

| | |
|---|---|
| **Pas du tout.** | Not at all. |
| **Il est tout prêt.** | He is quite ready. |
| **Elle était tout agitée.** | She was quite agitated. |
| **Elle est toute prête.** | She is quite ready. |

It will be seen from the last example that **tout** agrees like an adjective, before a feminine adjective beginning with a consonant(or aspirate **h**). This is also the case in the expression **tout . . . que,** 'however': **Toute bonne qu'elle est,** 'However good she is'.

**83. On,** 'one', 'you', 'they', 'people', 'we', is used (always in the singular) as an indefinite subject of a verb. The construction with **on** is often used in French when in English we use the passive:

| | |
|---|---|
| **On le cherche.** | They are looking for him. |
| **On verra.** | We shall see. |
| **On dit.** | They say, it is said. |

*a.* Although **on** is masculine third person singular, a feminine or plural noun or adjective may be construed with it when **on** distinctly refers to a feminine or plural:

| | |
|---|---|
| **On est tous égaux devant la loi.** | All are equal before the law. |
| **On n'est pas toujours jeune et belle.** | You will not always be young and beautiful. |

*b*. For euphony, **l'on**, instead of **on**, is often used after **et, si, ou, où**, but usually not when the word following begins with **l**:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Si l'on savait tout.** | If everything were known. |
| *But*, **Si on le savait.** | If they knew it. |

**84. Rien, personne**, whether with **ne** + a verb, or used alone with a verb understood, are regularly negative,—**rien** = 'nothing'; **personne** = 'no one':

| | |
|---|---|
| **Rien de nouveau.** | Nothing new. |
| **Je n'ai rien vu.** | I have seen nothing. |
| **Qu'avez-vous là?—Rien.** | What have you there?—Nothing. |
| **Je n'ai vu personne.** | I haven't seen any one. |

*Note*.—**Rien** and **personne** may also be used affirmatively ('anything', 'any one') in negative constructions:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Sans parler à personne.** | Without speaking to any one. |
| **Impossible de rien faire.** | Impossible to do anything. |

**85.** 1. **Même**, preceding its noun, or when used as a pronoun, means 'same'; following a noun or pronoun it means 'self', 'himself', etc.:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Les mêmes garçons.** | The same boys. |
| **Les garçons eux-mêmes.** | The boys themselves. |
| **Les mêmes.** | The same. |
| **Elles-mêmes.** | They themselves. |

2. **Même** is also used as an adverb meaning 'even':

| | |
|---|---|
| **Il aime même ses ennemis.** | He loves even his enemies. |
| **Les plus jeunes même sont allés.** | Even the youngest have gone. |

**86.** IDIOMATIC PHRASES.

| | |
|---|---|
| **Tout de même.** | All the same, nevertheless. |
| **J'ai manqué de tomber.** / **J'ai failli tomber.** / **J'ai pensé tomber.** | I nearly fell. |
| **Pensez-vous à Jean?** | Are you thinking of (about) John? |
| **Que pensez-vous de Jean?** | What do you think of (What is your opinion of) John? |
| **S'en prendre à.** | To blame, to find fault with. |

## EXERCISE XI

1

1. They avoid each other. 2. He speaks of everything, he thinks of everything, he knows everything. 3. We shall have some snow. 4. I think about you very often; I should like to see you oftener. 5. Both have come. 6. Neither one nor the other will come. 7. They harm each other. 8. This attack was directed against them both. 9. Have you any doubt about it?—None. 10. You blame me for something which I have not done. 11. Whom have you seen?—Nobody. 12. He will bring his brother and two other persons. 13. It is necessary to call another doctor. 14. No one is satisfied with his luck. 15. We traveled all day and all night. 16. This man is good for nothing. 17. What do you think of him?—He seems to act like an honest man. 18. Do you know any of these gentlemen? 19. Nobody looks at him. 20. He stopped at every step. 21. Every man has his ruling passion. 22. Every soldier ought to be brave. 23. Everything went from bad to worse. 24. Address yourself to some other person. 25. He has only a few days to live. 26. I nearly fell and I did not know what to do.

2

1. Everything has its advantages and its disadvantages. 2. Many a man acts like a child. 3. He has some cause (*de quoi*) for complaining. 4. Whoever has told you so is mistaken. 5. I do not mistrust any of my friends. 6. I am not satisfied with any of you. 7. Whoever you are, it is your duty to obey the law. 8. He is no longer thinking of that house; he wants to buy another one. 9. I have read both of those books; neither one is good. 10. This room is fifteen feet long by twelve feet wide. 11. If some one should hear us! 12. The heavenly bodies exert an influence upon each other. 13. Every meal is a feast when friendship serves it. 14. Seek some pretext or other (use *quelconque*). 15. One finds many a thorn ... one looks for roses. 16. There was such a crowd of people ... move. 17. No troops were better disciplined

than those of Napoleon. 18. Give me any other occupation than that one and I will accept it. 19. You cannot find two men who have [the] same face [and the] same features. 20. In the northern countries there are wolves all white or all black. 21. He was nearly drowned, he does not know how to swim. 22. I know very well that it is not the same thing in the eyes of the world. 23. They blame me as though (*si*) I had done it. 24. If any one asks for me, say I am indisposed and would like to be excused. 25. Do you know any one who can mend my umbrella? It was broken two days ago.

3

1. This lady, however elegantly she is dressed, has not distinguished manners. 2. In the first ages of the world, every father governed his family with absolute power. 3. These flowers are quite as fresh as they were yesterday. 4. These flowers are all as fresh as they were yesterday. 5. A stone which fell nearly killed him. 6. It is some five hundred years since the compass was discovered. 7. However wicked men may be, they would not dare to appear to be enemies of virtue. 8. Do not do to others what you would not have them do (*on* construction) to you. 9. I am too much a friend of yours to have thought of doing you any harm. 10. All parts of the body have a certain relation to each other. 11. The martyrs did not complain, often they sang even in the midst of the most frightful torments. 12. The same virtues which serve to found an empire, serve also to preserve it. 13. The senate was composed of the very ones who had the greatest interest in opposing the law. 14. Under a great prince every nation is capable of great things. 15. I don't know any man who is faultless. 16. Whoever is born envious will probably not lead a happy life. 17. When we count on others we are often deceived in our hopes. 18. Few writers have treated this subject, and no one thoroughly. 19. Do not be alarmed, in a few days everything will be well. 20. I have stolen nothing at all and I can easily explain everything, although appearances are against me.

# LESSON XII

## POSITION OF SUBJECT

**87.** The subject usually precedes the verb except in the following cases:

**88.** PRONOUN SUBJECTS.—Conjunctive pronoun subjects regularly follow the verb:

1. In questions:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Comprenez-vous (*or* Est-ce que vous comprenez)?** | Do you understand? |
| **Que dit-il?** | What does he say? |

2. After **aussi, encore, peut-être, toujours, à peine, en vain, au (du) moins**, etc.:

| | |
|---|---|
| **A peine était-il arrivé.** | Scarcely had he come. |

3. In parenthetical clauses:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Le roi, dit-il, est mort.** | The king, he says, is dead. |

4. In certain forms of conditional clauses:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Vous flatte-il, ne l'écoutez pas.** | If he flatters you, do not listen to him |

**89.** NOUN SUBJECTS.—When an interrogative sentence has a noun subject, the noun subject regularly precedes the verb, and a pleonastic pronoun follows the verb:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Votre frère est-il allé (*or* Est-ce que votre frère est allé)?** | Has your brother gone? |

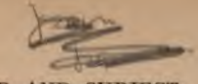
**90.** Note that the same principle regularly holds:

1. After **aussi, encore, peut-être, toujours, à peine, en vain, au (du) moins**, etc.:

| | |
|---|---|
| **A peine mon frère était-il arrivé.** | Scarcely had my brother come. |

2. In certain forms of conditional clauses:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Un homme vous flatte-il, ne l'écoutez pas.** | If a man flatters you, do not listen to him. |





3. When the question is introduced by an interrogative such as **combien, comment, quand, que, où**, etc., a noun subject is generally placed after the verb:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Que dit votre frère?** | What does your brother say? |
| **Où est votre frère?** | Where is your brother? |

**91.** In relative clauses the subject frequently follows the verb, particularly when the subject has modifiers:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Les conseils que me donna mon père qui m'a toujours guidé dans ma jeunesse.** | The advice given me by my father, who always guided me in my youth. |

**92.** A logical subject is sometimes anticipated by **il** or **ce**:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Ce furent les Français qui l'ont acheté.** | It was the French who bought it. |

*Note.*—In such constructions the logical subject is sometimes preceded by **que** or **que de** (cf. § 78, 3):

| | |
|---|---|
| **Il est beau que de mourir pour la patrie.** | It is noble to die for one's country. |
| **C'est un bel homme que M. Victor.** | Mr. Victor is a handsome man. |

## AGREEMENT OF VERB AND SUBJECT

**93.** A verb agrees with its subject in person and number:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Les hommes sont mortels.** | Men are mortal. |

**94.** 1. A collective noun regularly has a singular verb:

| | |
|---|---|
| **La foule s'amusait.** | The throng was amusing itself. |

2. But a collective noun determined by a plural noun, expressed or understood, has a plural verb unless the idea of the collective dominates:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Une nuée de sauterelles obscurcit l'air.** | A cloud of grasshoppers darkened the air. |
| **Une nuée de barbares désolèrent le pays.** | A horde of barbarians devastated the country. |

**95.** After expressions of quantity such as **beaucoup, peu, moins, assez, trop, un grand (petit) nombre, la plupart,** etc., when followed by a plural noun expressed or understood, the verb is regularly in the plural:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Beaucoup de personnes le pensent.** | Many people think so. |
| **La plupart écrivent ce nom ainsi.** | Most people write this name thus. |

**96.** After **ce** as grammatical subject, the verb **être** is usually plural if it is immediately followed by a predicate noun in the plural or a plural pronoun of the third person:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Ce sont les Anglais qui l'ont entrepris.** | It is the English who have undertaken it. |
| **Ce sont eux qui l'ont dit.** | It is they who said so. |

**97.** When there are two or more subjects the verb is regularly plural. When the subjects are of different persons the verb is in the first person if one of the subjects is of the first person, otherwise in the second:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Mon frère et moi sommes venus.** | My brother and I came. |
| **Vous et lui l'avez dit.** | You and he said so. |

*Note.*—**Nous** and **vous** are sometimes used pleonastically to recapitulate subjects of different persons:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Mon frère et moi nous sommes venus.** | My brother and I came. |

**98.** 1. Two subjects joined by **ni . . . ni** or by **ou** regularly take a plural verb:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Ni l'or ni la grandeur ne nous rendent heureux.** | Neither gold nor greatness makes us happy. |
| **La peur ou la misère ont fait commettre bien des fautes.** | Fear or poverty has caused many sins to be committed. |

2. But if the verb can apply to only one of the subjects it is in the singular:

| | |
|---|---|
| **La peur ou la misère lui a fait commettre cette faute.** | Either fear or poverty made him commit that sin. |
| **L'un ou l'autre a raison.** | One or the other is right. |

**99.** The verb may also be singular when the subjects are more or less synonymous, when they form a climax, or when they are summed up in a single word like **tout, rien,** etc.:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Un seul mot, un soupir, un coup d'œil nous trahira.** | A single word, a sigh, a glance will betray us. |
| **Remords, crainte, péril, rien ne m'a retenu.** | Remorse, fear, danger, nothing deterred me. |

**100.** In other cases of more than one subject the verb is usually singular or plural according to the sense:

| | |
|---|---|
| **C'est moins son ambition que ses malheurs qui l'ont perdu.** | It is less his ambition than his misfortunes that ruined him. |
| **Plus d'une personne agit sans réfléchir.** | More than one person acts without reflecting. |
| **Moins de deux ans se sont écoulés.** | Less than two years has passed by. |

**101.** Idiomatic Phrases with **bien.**

| | |
|---|---|
| **C'est bien dommage.** | It's a great pity. |
| **Un homme de bien.** | A good man. |
| **Un homme qui a du bien.** | A man of property. |
| **Un homme qui est bien.** | A good-looking man. |
| **Il fait bien.** | He does quite right. |
| **Vous ferez mieux (bien) d'y aller.** | You had better go there. |
| **Nous sommes fort bien ensemble.** | We are on very good terms. |
| **Nous sommes très bien ici.** | We are very comfortable here. |
| **On y est très bien.** | The accommodations are very good there. |
| **Nous avons bien le temps.** | We have plenty of time. |
| **Je le crois bien.** | I should think so. |
| **Gardez-vous-en bien.** | Do nothing of the sort. |

## Exercise XII

1

1. When do you leave for the country? 2. Few people neglect their own interests. 3. Neither the sun nor death can be gazed at steadily. 4. You had better go; he would like very much to see you. 5. What did the minister tell you? 6. Has your brother come? 7. School opens at nine and closes at four. 8. With whom did this lady take her journey? 9. What nation did this king conquer? 10. More than one person will be there on time. 11. How does your brother bear his misfortune? 12. Do nothing of the sort, you haven't time to think of those things. 13. Am I asleep or am I awake? 14. Is the terrible news true? 15. The law often permits what honor forbids. 16. The crowd of spectators prevents us from approaching. 17. Why did your brother leave? 18. Is your cousin Frederick at home? 19. Why do you want to leave so soon?—We are very comfortable here. 20. Did the dog run after you? 21. Is Mrs. Dickson in her room?—No, she is at her piano. 22. Are those books interesting?—Yes, many of them are very good. 23. Is your friend here? May I see him? 24. The thief, he told me, had not been caught. 25. You had better go and see her to-day; she is going to leave early to-morrow morning.

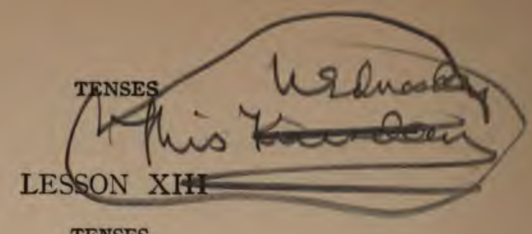
2

1. These materials are beautiful, but they cost a good deal too. 2. That kind of pears will not be ripe until winter. 3. Paris is fully fifty miles from here. 4. Why did the American colonies rebel against Great Britain? 5. We shall soon know what the fate of the queen will be. 6. Your time, your property, your life—everything belongs to your country. 7. The accommodations are very good; we spent two months there last summer. 8. Why does the law exact these formalities? 9. It was from Mocha that the best coffee came formerly. 10. He is serving a master who treats him badly, and so he wants to leave him. 11. Of all the children that are born, half, at the most, reach adolescence. 12. The few lessons which I took were enough. 13. When Adam delved and (*que*) Eve span, who was then the gentle-

man? 14. The few friends that I had came to my aid. 15. Noblemen, burghers, artisans, ploughmen, everybody became a soldier. 16. If he is not very rich he has at least enough to live on. 17. Virtue rather than knowledge elevates mankind. 18. Do nothing of the sort; he is a man of means and has no need of more money. 19. He is rich, so much the more should he be charitable. 20. If I haven't succeeded I have at least done my duty. 21. Life, death, riches, and poverty affect men very strongly. 22. Hardly had his father arrived, when his sister also entered. 23. Perhaps I may be useful to you some day. 24. God desired that all men should be brothers. 25. I don't want to go there; besides it is too late. 26. Isn't dinner ready? I am very hungry and very thirsty. 27. It is a great pity; I shall never see him again, perhaps.

3

1. He who passes the first part of his life in idleness cannot expect to rest in his old age. 2. It is fully three years since I have seen him. 3. The faculties of the mind are like plants: the more you cultivate them, the more fruit they give. 4. We have plenty of time, it is not necessary to hurry. 5. Neither the one nor the other has had the least thing to do with the great change which is going to take place. 6. Do nothing of the sort; don't you see that he does not know what he is saying? 7. The throng of men who surround the prince is the cause of his (say: *that he*) not recognizing any one of them. 8. The great, the rich, the poor, the common people, no one can escape death. 9. Perhaps my efforts will have some good results. 10. My brother or my sister will go to the doctor in order to ask his advice about George. 11. He is a good man, but he does not succeed; it is a great pity. 12. A crowd of men and women surrounded the man, who continued to protest his innocence. 13. Most of them seemed to believe him and wanted to let him go. 14. You and I have been friends too long to let such a little thing separate us. 15. It is the facts in the case that we want; you and your cousin do not seem willing to tell the whole truth. 16. Neither his wishes nor yours ought to be considered in this matter. 17. You are too cross, my child; you never want to do what the others wish.



## LESSON XIII

### TENSES

**102.** PRESENT.—Besides the uses common to both languages, the present tense is used in French (where the English requires the perfect) to denote an action or state continued from the past, after **il y a . . . que, voilà (voici) . . . que, depuis, depuis quand, depuis . . . que:**

| | |
|---|---|
| **Il travaille à cela depuis deux ans.** | He has been working at that for two years. |
| **Voilà (voici, il y a) deux jours qu'il est ici.** | He has been here for two days. |

**103.** IMPERFECT.—1. The imperfect (descriptive past) is used to denote an ac ion or state which is unfinished, customary, continued, repeated, contemporaneous, permanent, etc., in past time:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Il se couchait de bonne heure.** | He used to go to bed early. |
| **Il jouait pendant qu'elle écrivait.** | He played while she wrote. |
| **La neige tombait.** | The snow was falling. |

2. The imperfect is likewise used:

*a.* When the pluperfect is used in English, after **il y a . . . que, voilà (voici) . . . que, depuis, depuis quand, depuis . . . que,** to denote an action or state begun at a previous time and continued in the past:

| | |
|---|---|
| **J'étais là depuis longtemps.** | I had been there for a long time. |

*b.* Sometimes instead of the conditional or the pluperfect:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Si vous ne l'aviez pas fait, il se tuait (se serait tué).** | If you had not done it, he would have killed himself. |

**104.** PAST DEFINITE.—The past definite (preterit) denotes an event as wholly past without reference to present time.

It is the tense of simple narration, frequently answering the question 'what happened next?' and marking the succession of events, the progress of the narrative. It is rarely used in spoken French or in ordinary correspondence, the past indefinite being used instead:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Nous nous levâmes à cinq heures.** | We rose at five o'clock. |
| **Dix heures sonnèrent.** | It struck ten. |
| **Il était déjà malade lorsque je le vis.** | He was already sick when I saw him. |

The difference between the use of the imperfect and the past definite is shown in the following paragraphs:

Tandis que Mazarin **faisait** ce traité, Charles II lui **demandait** une de ses nièces en mariage. Le mauvais état de ses affaires, qui **obligeait** ce prince à cette démarche, **fut** ce qui lui **attira** un refus. On a même soupçonné le cardinal d'avoir voulu marier au fils de Cromwell celle qu'il **refusait** au oi d'Angleterre. Ce qui est sûr, c'est que, lorsqu'il **vit** ensuite le chemin du trône moins fermé à Charles II, il **voulut** renouer ce mariage; mais il **fut** refusé à son tour.

Il ne se **trouva** dans ce temps aucun parti qui ne fût faible: celui de la cour l'**était** autant que les autres; l'argent et les forces **manquaient** à tous; les factions se **multipliaient**; les combats n'avaient produit de chaque côté que des pertes et des regrets. La cour se **vit** obligée de sacrifier encore Mazarin, que tout le monde **appelait** la cause des troubles, et qui n'en **était** que le prétexte. Il **sortit** une seconde fois du royaume: pour surcroît de honte, il **fallut** que le roi donnât une déclaration publique, par laquelle il **renvoyait** son ministre, en vantant ses services et en se plaignant de son exil.

**105.** PAST INDEFINITE.—In addition to its use in place of the past definite (see § 104), the past indefinite (present perfect) denotes an event as *now* completed:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Ma sœur est arrivée ce soir.** | My sister arrived this evening. |
| **L'empereur est arrivé.** | The emperor has come. |

**106.** Pluperfect and Past Anterior.—Both the pluperfect and the past anterior correspond in general to the English pluperfect:

1. After **si**, 'if', the pluperfect, and not the past anterior must be used:

| | |
|---|---|
| **S'il s'était soigné, il se porterait bien maintenant.** | If he had taken care of himself, he would be well now. |

2. The past anterior is rarely used except in temporal clauses after **quand, lorsque, après que, dès que, aussitôt que, à peine, ne . . . pas plus tôt . . . que:**

| | |
|---|---|
| **Quand j'eus fini, je partis.** | When I had finished, I departed. |

**107.** Future.—The future corresponds in general to the English ~~future.~~ present It is also used:

1. In subordinate clauses which logically imply futurity, as after the conjunctions **quand, lorsque, dès que, aussitôt que, tant que, aussi longtemps que**, etc.:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Quand il viendra.** | When he comes. |
| **Tant qu'il vivra.** | As long as he lives. |
| **Comme il vous plaira.** | As you please. |

2. To denote likelihood, probability, etc.:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Ce sera quelque grand homme.** | It is probably some great man. |
| **Mon père sera venu.** | My father has doubtless come. |

3. Occasionally with the force of an imperative:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Vous porterez cette lettre à son adresse.** | Take this letter to its address. |

4. Note that after **si**, 'whether', the future or conditional is used, but not after **si**, 'if':

| | | |
|---|---|---|
| | **Je ne sais s'il viendra.** | I don't know whether he will come. |
| *But,* | **Si vous le voulez, j'irai avec vous.** | If you wish, I shall go with you. |

**108.** CONDITIONAL.—In addition to the uses common to both languages, the conditional is used in French:

1. To soften a request or statement:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Je ne saurais vous le dire.** | I cannot tell you. |
| **Auriez-vous l'obligeance?** | Would you be so kind? |

2. To denote probabili y, possibility, etc.:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Trente hommes auraient été tués.** | They say that thirty men were killed. |
| **Serait-il possible?** | Can that be possible? |

3. To denote concession after **quand, quand même, que:**

| | |
|---|---|
| **Quand je l'aurais, je ne serais pas content.** | Even if I had it, I should not be satisfied. |
| **Je l'aurais, que je n'en serais pas content.** | Even if I had it, I should not be satisfied with it. |

**109.** The English modal verbs such as 'should' (expressing duty), 'would' (expressing volition), and 'would' in the sense of 'used to', must be carefully distinguished from the real conditional:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Vous devriez le dire.** | You should (ought to) tell it. |
| **Elle chantait souvent le soir.** | She would often sing of an evening. |

## SOME IMPORTANT VERBS

**110.** The verbs **devoir, pouvoir,** and **falloir** offer a peculiar difficulty, because, while the French verbs have all the tenses, the corresponding English verbs are defective, and various circumlocutions must be used in the translation. Thus **il devrait venir** = 'he ought to come', while **il aurait dû venir** = 'he ought to have come'; **il a dû venir** = 'he had to, was obliged to, come',—the verb 'ought' not having a past participle.

Compare also **il faut que vous veniez (il vous faut venir),** 'you must come'; **il aurait fallu que vous vinssiez (il vous**

**aurait fallu venir**), 'it would have been necessary for you to come'; **il lui a fallu venir**, 'he had to, was obliged to, come'.

Also, **je peux venir**, 'I can (may) come'; **j'aurais pu venir**, 'I could have (might have) come'; **j'ai pu venir**, 'I was able to (could) come'.

**111.** Idiomatic Phrases with **devoir**.

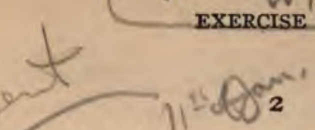
| | |
|---|---|
| **Je lui dois cent francs.** | I owe him a hundred francs. |
| **Je dois aller.** | I must, am to, have to, go. |
| **Je devais aller.** | I was to, was obliged to, had to, go. |
| **Je dus aller.** | I had to, was obliged to, go. |
| **Il a dû partir.** | He had to, has been obliged to, leave. |
| **Il doit être parti.** | He must have left. |

## Exercise XIII

I

1. He went to Boston on horseback. 2. I have been waiting for you two hours and a half. 3. As soon as I receive your letter I shall answer it. 4. I thought that he was making fun of me. 5. I am to dine to-morrow at your house. 6. No one moved when we entered. 7. As he did not know how to write, he made a cross at the bottom of the page. 8. The priest had finished his repast and was sleeping lightly, his head bent over his breviary. 9. How long have you been studying French?—I have been studying it six months. 10. They would esteem you if they knew you. 11. She must have been beautiful in her youth. 12. Wait for me, I shall have finished in a moment. 13. They assured me that you would go to the country next week. 14. Tell me who broke that plate. 15. The maid did it; she broke it in a thousand pieces. 16. I was so frightened yesterday! 17. I haven't seen him for several years. 18. He hasn't eaten anything all day long; you should have sent for the doctor. 19. We should not dare to make such a proposition to you. 20. You ought to write to him; he is one of your friends. 21. We thought that these words would make a great impression on her, but she did nothing but laugh. 22. When you have told me your opinion I will tell you mine.







2

1. If you had spoken sooner you would have had this seat. 2. At first we wondered whether it would not be better to take (*transporter*) him to the country. 3. The next day we were [just] asking whether the poor lieutenant was dead or alive, when we saw him appear in person. 4. He must have made a good deal of money in America. 5. As soon as they appeared they were overpowered. 6. I reassured him as best I could, but in reality I had little hope. 7. I had reached that point (*en être là*) in my reflections when I heard my name called. 8. That was more than fifteen years ago. 9. I leave this very evening for London. 10. You were wrong, you should not have gone out. 11. I have been looking for you for three hours, to consult you about a serious matter. 12. We haven't seen each other for nine months. 13. The horse I was counting on has been sick for some time. 14. I haven't seen a newspaper for more than a week. 15. I should like to make him come in order to tell him that I don't set much store by him. 16. I find only two; there must be one volume more. 17. I can't (*savoir*) tell you how glad I am to see you. 18. When we were young we slept twelve hours without waking. 19. You must know this piece of music, nothing could be prettier. 20. My brother-in-law used to play it for us every time he came to see us.

3

1. I read your letter to M. Despréaux; he was very much pleased with it and thought that you wrote very elegantly. 2. He entered (into) a little drawing-room and waited until the priest, whom he heard conversing with a person in another room, was alone. 3. If I learn anything about him, I'll keep you posted. 4. I knew at once what I had to do. 5. It seemed to me that you looked better than you had ever done, and yet they told me you were far from well. 6. In the six months that I have known that, I have not had the courage to say anything to any one, not even to my wife. 7. You ought to go to see him, he has been sick for two weeks. 8. All that they could say was that the two families had been living there for a month; that they had *never paid* a cent; that the proprietor had just driven them a

and that it was a fine riddance. 9. Even if his disease had not been a malignant fever, said Gil Blas, my remedies were enough to make it dangerous. 10. I accosted a grave and stout personage who was standing (*se t nir*) at the door of the archbishop's study, in order to open and shut it when it was necessary. 11. When the sun set they saw the boat disappear below the horizon, but what became of it is not known. 12. Do you know that we have not seen each other for thirty five years? 13. Well, young man, he said, you came several days ago, and we haven't seen you anywhere; one would say that you were hiding. 14. You must have had a very good time.

## LESSON XIV

### THE SUBJUNCTIVE

**112.** The subjunctive is the mood of uncertainty. Thus, when in the principal clause a doubt, wish, etc., is expressed as to the fulfillment of the idea of the subordinate clause, the verb in the subordinate clause is in the subjunctive. Accordingly, in **je veux qu'il vienne**, 'I want him to come', I have certain doubts about the realization of my desire since the action depends upon the will of another, and therefore the subjunctive must be used in the dependent clause. But, in the statement, **je savais qu'il était là**, 'I knew that he was there', there is absolute certainty about what is expressed in the subordinate clause, and the indicative must be used. It must be borne in mind that the use of the subjunctive depends upon the idea of uncertainty, etc., expressed in the principal clause, and not upon any particular word as such. Thus, in the sentence, **je crois qu'il est là**, 'I think that he is there', the statement is regarded as certain, and the verb of the subordinate clause is in the indicative. But if the sentence is made interrogative (or negative), the statement is looked upon as doubtful, and we must say: **croyez-vous** ***qu'il soit là***.

## SUBJUNCTIVE IN DEPENDENT CLAUSES

### I

### Substantive Clauses

**113.** In substantive clauses introduced by **que** the subjunctive is used as the object of a verb, or, with impersonal verbs, as the logical subject of a verb:

1. After expressions of will, desire, command, necessity, prohibition, consent, approval or disapproval:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Il ordonne qu'on vous arrête.** | He orders you to be arrested. |
| **Je veux que tu sortes.** | I want you to go out. |
| **Permettez que je vous dise la vérité.** | Permit me to tell you the truth. |
| **Il faut qu'il vienne.** | He must come. |
| **Il est possible qu'il dorme.** | It is possible that he is asleep. |
| **J'approuve qu'il lise ce livre.** | I approve of his reading this book. |

2. After expressions of emotion, as of joy, sorrow, fear, anger, shame, surprise, indignation, dissatisfaction:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Il est fâcheux que cette affaire ait mal tourné.** | It is annoying that this affair turned out badly. |
| **Je suis surpris que vous soyez venu.** | I am surprised that you have come. |
| **Je crains qu'il ne parte.** | I am afraid he is going. |

3. After expressions of doubt, denial, ignorance, despair, etc.:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Je ne nie pas qu'elle soit belle.** | I do not deny that she is beautiful. |
| **Il est rare qu'il se trompe.** | It is seldom that he is mistaken. |

4. After expressions of saying, thinking, knowing, perceiving, etc., but only when used negatively, interrogatively, or conditionally, thus implying doubt:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Je ne dis pas qu'il l'ait fait.** | I do not say that he has done it. |
| **Je ne crois pas qu'il soit malade.** | I do not believe he is ill. |
| *But,* **Je pense qu'il est malade.** | I think he is ill. |

*a.* If doubt is implied the subjunctive stands even after affirmative expressions:

| | |
|---|---|
| **On dirait (croirait) qu'il soit aveugle.** | One would say (believe) that he is blind. |

*b.* After a negation, condition, or interrogation the indicative may be used when there is no doubt in the speaker's mind:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Il ne sait pas que son ami est malade.** | He does not know that his friend is ill. |

*Note.*—If, however, the **que** clause precedes, the subjunctive must be used:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Qu'il ait été tué, tout le monde le sait.** | Everybody knows that he was killed. |

**114. Il semble** may take the indicative or subjunctive according as one wishes to express something as probable or as doubtful:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Il semble qu'il a perdu la tête.**<br>**Il semble qu'il ait perdu la tête.** | He seems to have lost his head. |

*Note.*—**Il me semble,** being equivalent to **je pense,** is generally followed by the indicative:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Il me semble que vous avez raison.** | It seems to me that you are right. |

**115.** Idiomatic Phrases with **falloir.**

| | |
|---|---|
| **Il lui fallait encore cent francs.** | He still lacked a hundred francs. |
| **Avez-vous tout ce qu'il vous faut ?** | Have you all you need? |
| **Il s'en faut de cinq minutes.** | It lacks five minutes of it. |
| **Il faut qu'elle aille (il lui faut aller) bon gré mal gré.** | She must go willy-nilly. |
| **C'est un homme comme il faut.** | He is a gentleman. |
| **Peu s'en faut qu'il se soit trahi.** | He very nearly betrayed himself. |
| **Le fils n'est pas si riche que le père, il s'en faut de beaucoup.** | The son is not so rich as the father by a good deal. |
| **Peu s'en est fallu qu'il n'ait été tué.**<br>**Il s'en est peu fallu qu'il n'ait été tué.** | He was nearly killed. |
| **Il m'est fallu deux heures pour venir ici.** | It took me two hours to come here. |

## EXERCISE XIV

### 1

1. I did not know that he had come. 2. Do you believe that is true? 3. He does not know that his father is ill. 4. I hope you will do so. 5. I do not hope that you will do so. 6. He told me that he was going to the city. 7. Do you wish me to go at once? 8. I don't believe that you can do so. 9. At least, sir, permit me to answer you. 10. He believes that Friday is an unlucky day for him. 11. What do you want me to do? 12. I want you to talk less and to do more. 13. We do not always like to be told (*on* construction) the truth. 14. Does he think, then, that I have need of him? 15. I am sorry that you haven't seen that picture. 16. I do not believe that he will go. 17. I asked him what book he was reading. 18. I do not doubt that he will come. 19. Do you wish me to see him before you go? 20. You must set your room in order more carefully. 21. Your brother deserves to be punished. 22. What do you think I ought to do? 23. I did not know why he had come. 24. I want you to do that before you go to school. 25. My father would like me to spend the winter at Nice, but I do not think I shall go. 26. I must stay at home to-day, I played golf yesterday almost all day. 27. I wish he would come, but I should not like him to stay more than one day. 28. He must have told you everything. 29. You ought to go home at once, your mother is waiting for you. 30. I have only fifty cents, so you see I still lack twenty-five.

### 2

1. It is easier to obey than to command. 2. It appears that you have never seen anything like it (*semblable*). 3. These unfortunate [people] do not believe that the soul is immortal. 4. What you say proves that he is rich, but it does not prove that he is an honest man. 5. Do you think it necessary to believe all he says? 6. It had never occurred to him that he could buy a house. 7. Obey, if you want to be obeyed. 8. I mean that nothing shall be done here without my orders. 9. The committee has decided that these despatches shall not be published. 10. I do not deny that our enterprise

is very difficult. 11. I don't want people to make fun of me, but I don't want them to pity me either. 12. He denies that he has ever varied in his conduct. 13. He concealed [the fact] that he had had anything to do with [*avoir part à*] this affair. 14. What time do you think it is?—It is a quarter before two. 15. At what time must you go home? 16. I did not think it was so late. 17. I must speak to him at once. 18. Do you think that it is necessary for me to come before eight o'clock? 19. It may be that he is in the house, though I have not seen him go in. 20. He very nearly fell into the water. 21. It seems to me that we should do well to do what he desires. 22. He must have lost my watch; it is a pity, because I need it every day. 23. She ought to have written to her father at once. 24. It is a pity that he is not here, he is always so lively. 25. I am surprised that you think so, though it may be that you are right.

3

1. It was decided that they should conceal his journey from his family. 2. He did not suspect that they had proofs against him. 3. If I believed that he would come to-day, I should wait for him. 4. I told him that I had to come before noon as I was to leave on the three-o'clock train. 5. No, my friend, I should prefer to have you consult my father first about this journey. 6. Do you know how long it takes to go from Chicago to San Francisco by rail? 7. We cannot wish that this man succeed in his projects; but, on the other hand, can we wish him to lose all hope? 8. I do not say that you are wrong, but I claim that you might have avoided this whole scene. 9. I would like to have an equitable and trustworthy judge sitting there, opposite me, on the other side of my writing-table. 10. He is far from being strong, although he looks very well. 11. If you want some spectacles that suit your eyes (*vue*, f.), do not take this number. 12. Why do you blame me for what I have not done? 13. If some one tells you that one may become rich otherwise than by work and economy, do not listen to him; he is a corrupter. 14. I must have misplaced my books; you haven't seen them this morning, have you? 15. I am not ignorant of [the fact] that our enemies have *already* entertained some suspicion, but do you imagine that I have

not taken my precautions? 16. He thought that it was not impossible that she had seen what he had just done. 17. Do you think that it will continue to rain long?—I don't think the rain will stop to-day. 18. Your teacher will tell you what you ought to do. 19. Whoever we are, we need to be loved, and friendship exacts a return. 20. I am not a judge of rubies, but I don't believe it is necessary to go to a jeweler in order to be convinced that I am a fool.

## LESSON XV

### II

### SUBJUNCTIVE IN ADJECTIVAL CLAUSES

**116.** In adjectival clauses (i.e. clauses introduced by a relative and qualifying a noun) the subjunctive is used:

1. To denote a characteristic, a purpose, a result, but only when not considered as attained or certain:

| | | |
|---|---|---|
| | **Je cherche un livre qui soit intéressant.** | I am looking for an interesting book. |
| *But,* | **Je cherche un livre qui est intéressant.** | I am looking for an interesting book (i.e. which I know *is* interesting). |
| | **Montrez-moi un chemin qui conduise à Paris.** | Show me a road leading to Paris. |
| *But,* | **Montrez-moi le chemin qui conduit à Paris.** | Show me the road which leads to Paris. |

2. After a negative, interrogative, or conditional clause, when doubt is implied. The indicative, however, is used when the action is looked upon as certain or as a fact:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Qu'y a-t-il qui vous fasse peur?** | What is there to frighten you? |
| **Il y a peu d'hommes qui le sachent.** | There are few men who know it. |
| **Ce n'est pas lui que je crains.** | It is not he that I fear (i.e. I do fear, but not him). |

3. After a superlative, or a word with superlative force, such as **seul, unique, premier, dernier:**

| | |
|---|---|
| **C'est l'unique espoir qui me soit resté.** | It is the only hope which I have left. |

19. I cannot go with you, I am worn out. 20. Do you think that the weather will be fine to-morrow? 21. It seems to me that the postman has not come yet, I have not seen him. 22. The best dog I have ever seen belonged to one of my friends. 23. Is there any one here who can write a page of French without making a mistake? 24. Do you doubt that I am sick?

2

1. I must see him at whatever time he comes. 2. If that man sees you, you risk being recognized; he must not see you. 3. He might have been here now; I am afraid he is exhausted. 4. He made so much noise that we couldn't hear anything. 5. Whoever asks for me, say that I am busy. 6. I am trying to get a place which is agreeable to me. 7. I am grateful to him for having come so early. 8. These are the three most pleasant hours that I have ever spent. 9. Might I ask you where the post-office is?—I cannot tell you, sir, I am not acquainted with the town. 10. I rise before daylight. 11. It is not probable that you would have obtained the consent of your father if I had not spoken in your favor. 12. You are the first person I have seen to-day. 13. You must go where your duty calls you and not wait until they send you there. 14. It would have been better to tell him immediately. 15. It is as easy to deceive oneself without noticing it, as it is difficult to deceive others without their noticing it. 16. There are few men who are really learned. 17. I may not see you to-morrow, I shall not be at home. 18. I am very glad you came; John wanted me to go walking with him, but I prefer to stay at home and talk with you. 19. It is a pity you do not play golf, it is the best game I know. 20. I am glad that you did not take cold when you fell into the water. 21. I am sure that he was here yesterday; I saw his hat on the table.

3

1. An honorable name and a good education—that is the finest heritage a father can bequeath to his children. 2. All that he could have desired would have been a conversation with him; but he found that he ought to fear it rather than desire it. 3. I may not be at home to-morrow; I intend to go calling. 4. He helped me a great deal

and I am grateful to him for it. 5. I don't know whether I ought not to be very glad that you have forgotten having seen me there. 6. He would take that for a great compliment, and I am not sure that he would not be right. 7. War has its necessities; we have to admit them, however cruel they may be. 8. It would have been better to go to-day; you had plenty of time. 9. One evening she asked her mother if she thought that there were circumstances when it would be right to tell a lie. 10. He could not suppose that there existed in the world a man who wished harm to another man. 11. I will tell you a secret, but do not confide it to any one whatever. 12. She is very interesting; I should like to see her again. 13. Although he passed very quickly, he heard distinctly everything she said to him. 14. She rose as though some sudden inspiration did not permit her to hesitate. 15. He had enough control over himself not to pronounce a word which could compromise him. 16. I cannot tell where I shall be to-morrow; I am thinking of going to Paris.

## LESSON XVI

### III

### Subjunctive in Adverbial Clauses

**118.** In adverbial clauses (i.e. clauses qualifying the action of a verb) the subjunctive is used:

1. After conjunctions of time, such as **jusqu'à ce que, avant que, tant que, en attendant que:**

| | |
|---|---|
| **J'irai le voir avant qu'il parte.** | I shall go and see him before he leaves. |
| **En attendant qu'il vienne.** | Until he comes. |

*Note.*—When referring to an event completed in past time, **jusqu'à ce que** and **tant que** may take the indicative:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Il résista tant qu'il pouvait.** | He resisted as long as he could. |

2. After conjunctions of purpose:

*a.* The following conjunctions always take the subjunctive: **afin que, pour que, de crainte (peur) que . . . ne:**

| | |
|---|---|
| **Afin que vous le sachiez.** | In order that you may know it. |

*b.* When the following conjunctions express a purpose whose fulfilment is uncertain, the subjunctive is used, but when they denote a result, the indicative: **de manière que, de façon que, de (en) sorte que, si ce n'est que, tellement que**:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Conduisez-vous de sorte que nous soyons contents.** | Conduct yourself so that we may be satisfied. |
| **Il s'est conduit de sorte que nous sommes contents.** | He conducted himself so that we are satisfied. |

3. After conjunctions of condition: **supposé que, en (au) cas que, pourvu que**, etc.:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Au cas qu'il vienne.** | In case he comes. |

*a.* **Si**, 'if', takes the indicative, but the pluperfect subjunctive is occasionally found in both the condition and the result clause:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Si j'eusse eu ce livre, je l'eusse donné à mon frère.** | If I had had this book, I should have given it to my brother. |

*b.* When **si**, 'if', is replaced by **que** in a following clause, the subjunctive is required in the latter:

| | |
|---|---|
| **S'il vient et qu'il ne soit pas seul, je vous avertirai.** | If he comes and is not alone, I shall let you know. |

4. After conjunctions of concession: **quoique, bien que, encore que, malgré que, non obstant que**:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Quoiqu'il (bien qu'il) soit boiteux.** | Although he is lame. |

5. After the indefinite relatives **qui que, quel que, quoi que, quelque que**, and after the analogous **si, quelque, pour, tout**, when used adverbially before adjectives in the sense of 'however', 'whatever':

| | |
|---|---|
| **Quel que soit le plaisir que cause la vengeance.** | Whatever be the pleasure that vengeance gives. |
| **Quoi qu'il en soit.** | However it may be. |
| **Si grand qu'il soit, un roi n'est qu'un homme.** | However great he be, a king is only a man. |

6. After conjunctions expressing negation, such as **non que, non pas que, loin que, sans que**:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Non qu'il ne sois fâcheux de le mécontenter.** | Not but that it is too bad to displease him. |

**119.** When **que** replaces a conjunction except **si** (see above), the verb is in the mood required by the conjunction:

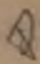
| | |
|---|---|
| **Quoiqu'il soit arrivé et qu'il ne soit pas fatigué, nous n'irons pas nous promener aujourd'hui.** | Although he has come and is not tired, we shall not go walking today. |

**120.** The following lists will be found useful:

1. Construed with the indicative or the conditional:

**à mesure que**
**ainsi que**
**attendu que**
**aussi bien que**
**aussitôt que**
**autant que**
**de même que**
**depuis que**
**dès que**
**durant que**
**outre que**
**parce que**
**pendant que**
**tandis que**
**vu que**





2. Construed with the subjunctive:

**afin que**
**à moins que**
**avant que**
**bien que**
**de peur que**
**de crainte que**
**en cas que**
**loin que**
**non que**
**pour que**
**pour peu que**
**pourvu que**
**quoique**
**sans que**
**si peu que**
**soit que**
**supposé que**

3. The following take the indicative when they express a positive fact, a result, and the subjunctive when they express a purpose or something whose fulfillment is doubtful:

**de façon que**
**de manière que**
**de sorte que**
**en sorte que**
**de telle sorte que**
**si ce n'est que**
**sinon que**
**tel que**
**tellement que**

**121.** Idiomatic Phrases with **vouloir**.—'Will' denoting mere futurity must be carefully distinguished from 'will' expressing volition:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Je ne veux pas venir.** | I will not come. |
| **Il viendra demain.** | He will come to-morrow. |
| **Je le veux bien.** | I am willing, with pleasure. |
| **Je voudrais (bien).** | I should like very much. |
| **J'aurais voulu le savoir.** | I should have liked to know it. |
| **Il n'a pas voulu le faire.** | He would not (did not want to) do so. |
| **Veuillez m'attendre.** | Please wait for me. |
| **Que veut dire ce mot?** | What does this word mean? |
| **En vouloir à quelqu'un.** | To have a grudge against some one. |
| **Vous avez tort de m'en vouloir.** | You are wrong to be angry with me. |

## Exercise XVI

### I

1. Although I have eyes, I have not yet seen it. 2. Whatever you may say to me, I cannot believe that he is wrong. 3. Although he had left before me, I overtook him very soon. 4. I can't talk without his interrupting me. 5. Would you like to speak to him or to me? 6. Accompany him until he is outside of the town. 7. I shall write to you in case he tells me some news. 8. I will follow you wherever you go. 9. What does this word mean, please? 10. We should like very much to go to New Orleans. 11. I paid him that sum before he left. 12. I will conduct myself in such a way that my parents may be satisfied with me. 13. We will not leave unless he goes with us. 14. I shall go to see him before he leaves. 15. We must start at once if we wish to get home before it grows dark (*faire nuit*). 16. We should like to come, but I am afraid we shall not have time. 17. As long as you are well you ought to be happy. 18. Wait here until he comes. 19. If I had not been ill, I should have finished my task now. 20. What shall I say in case he asks me to do so? 21. I wanted to talk with you this morning, but I couldn't find you. 22. Try to buy something which will last a long time. 23. Act so that your father will be proud of you. 24. He continued to work in spite of [the fact] that he was very sick. 25. You are knocking in vain; there

is no one at home. 26. I am not so prejudiced in his favor that I cannot see his faults. 27. Please talk more slowly.

2

1. This book is always on the desk in order that it may be consulted. 2. He ran until he was outside the town. 3. He worked in order that he might be the first in his class. 4. Would you like to take a walk, or would you prefer to take a ride on horseback? 5. We must live in such a way as to wrong no one (*say:* that we, etc.). 6. Night came [on], so that it was impossible to go farther. 7. Do you ask me what that expression means? I don't know, I have never seen it before. 8. I was his friend until I discovered that he spoke ill of me. 9. There is no difficulty in that, provided we have a good many men. 10. I do not doubt that you are already very clever, although you appear very young. 11. Arrange it so that you arrive before I do. 12. One can't blame him for it; it really wasn't his fault. 13. Rest easy until you are better informed. 14. You shall not have it unless you pay for half of it. 15. However impossible it may seem, it is nevertheless true that the whole crew was saved. 16. Far from getting angry he even appeared not to notice that anything had happened. 17. I have just come from the doctor's; I had to wait until he had seen four other patients. 18. He is always ready to go hunting whenever he has a chance. 19. As long as the war lasted he read the newspapers morning and evening. 20. If our friends come to-morrow and if it is not too cold we shall all go sleighing. 21. Why don't you act like a gentleman? 22. We should not forget to be respectful to people who are much older than we are. 23. Yes, I am acquainted with that man, but I don't know where he lives.

3

1. He was rich without any one suspecting it, for he lived like a poor man. 2. He failed in his undertaking, so that he was forced to retire. 3. The opening was so large that one could put one's hand into it. 4. His four sons made four parts of his heritage, so that each one of them might have an approximately equal share. 5. I don't *remember having* seen you there, and if you have been there it is with-





out my knowing it. 6. The boy followed them until they had turned the corner of the street. 7. If the weather permits and your father is willing we shall take a drive to-morrow afternoon. 8. It is not a question of how much money he has; everybody knows that he has more than his neighbors, and it is accordingly only a question of good-will. 9. The reign of this prince was too short for him to execute his vast projects. 10. Before any one had got out of the cars, the police inspectors presented themselves at the doors and examined the travelers. 11. The proofs of religion are so convincing that, except for a wilful blindness, one is obliged to subscribe to them. 12. Why did you blame him when you were not sure that he had said so? 13. Will you have the kindness to lend me that book?—Of course I don't want it unless you have read it. 14. Before I form any plan I shall wait until things have a more settled look. 15. The customs-inspection is one of the great inconveniences of traveling; it often occasions a long delay, even if one does not have much baggage. 16. A passport is not always necessary, but it is nevertheless often useful, especially in order to identify the traveler. 17. American tourists frequently give larger tips than is necessary, either because they wish to appear liberal, or because they are not aware of how much they ought to give. 18. I want my brother to go at once, but I shall not be able to go until I have finished my work. 19. Please call me at daybreak; as soon as I have breakfasted I shall set out for a long walk and I may not be back before evening.

This Lesson Mch 9, 1910.

## LESSON XVII

### SUBJUNCTIVE IN INDEPENDENT CLAUSES

**122.** In independent clauses the subjunctive is used in French:

1. To express a wish, command, or concession. Note that the imperative of the third person is regularly expressed by **que** with the subjunctive:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Qu'il parte.** | Let him depart. |
| **Qu'il vienne, je serai ici.** | Let him come, I shall be here. |
| **Plût au Ciel!** | Would to Heaven! |

2. Instead of the past conditional in a hypothetical sentence:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Il l'eût cru impossible.** | He would have believed it impossible. |
| **S'il eût (avait) agi de la sorte, il eût (aurait) écrit une lettre.** | If he had acted in that way, he would have written a letter. |
| *Note:* **Pas que je sache.** | Not that I know. |
| **Je ne sache rien de plus beau.** | I know nothing more beautiful. |

SEQUENCE OF TENSES

**123.** If the verb of the principal clause is in the present or future, or in the imperative, use:

1. The present subjunctive in the subordinate clause to express present or future action:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Je défends qu'il vienne.** | I forbid him to come. |
| **Je défendrai qu'il vienne.** | I shall forbid him to come. |

2. The perfect subjunctive in the subordinate clause to express a past action:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Je doute que vous ayez pu le faire.** | I doubt if you were able to do it. |
| **Je douterai toujours que vous ayez pu le faire.** | I shall always doubt that you were able to do it. |

**124.** If the verb of the governing clause is in a past tense or in the conditional, use:

1. The imperfect subjunctive to express future action:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Je voulais (voudrais) qu'il vînt.** | I wanted (should like) him to come. |

2. The pluperfect subjunctive to express past action:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Je ne savais pas que vous l'eussiez déjà fait.** | I didn't know that you had already done it. |

**125.** The sense of the context sometimes determines the tense sequence:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Je ne dis pas qu'il fût à blâmer.** | I do not say that he was to blame. |
| **Je ne crois pas qu'il le fasse, si on le lui défend.** | I do not believe he will do it, if he is forbidden to. |
| **Je ne crois pas qu'il le fît, si on le lui défendait.** | I do not believe he did it, if he was forbidden to. |
| **Je ne croirai jamais qu'il l'eût fait, si on le lui avait défendu.** | I shall never believe he would have done it, if he had been forbidden to. |
| **J'ai souhaité qu'il parvînt.** | I wished that he would succeed. |

**126.** The conditional when used to soften a statement (see § 108, 1) is equivalent to a present tense:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Qui pourrait douter qu'il soit homme de bien?** | Who can doubt that he is a good man? |

**127.** The imperfect subjunctive, especially that of the first conjugation, is generally avoided in everyday speech, the present subjunctive being used instead:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Il faudrait qu'il vienne (vînt).** | It would be necessary for him to come. |

**128.** Idiomatic Phrases with **avoir.**

| | |
|---|---|
| **Avoir chaud, froid.** | To be warm, cold. |
| **Avoir faim, soif.** | To be hungry, thirsty. |
| **Avoir tort, raison.** | To be wrong, right. |
| **Avoir mal à la tête, aux dents.** | To have a headache, toothache. |
| **Qu'avez-vous?—Rien.** | What is the matter with you?—Nothing. |
| **Qu'y a-t-il?, Qu'est-ce qu'il y a?** | What is the matter? |
| **Il y a deux mois.** | Two months ago. |
| **Combien y a-t-il d'ici à Paris?** | How far is it from here to Paris? |
| **Combien y a-t-il qu'il est à Paris?** | How long has he been in Paris? |
| **Il y aura demain deux mois qu'il est arrivé.** | It will be two months to-morrow since he came. |
| **Il pouvait y avoir une dizaine de personnes.** | There might be about ten persons there. |

## EXERCISE XVII

### 1

1. I did not think that she was more than fifteen years old. 2. I am surprised that you refused the place which was offered to you. 3. What is the matter with you?—I have a headache. 4. I hope you will not refuse me the favor I ask of you. 5. Heaven grant that I reach Paris before them! 6. I should like to know if you have all that you need. 7. How long have you been here?—It was two weeks yesterday since I came. 8. I haven't heard a word that he said. 9. He asked him his name, although he was perfectly well acquainted with the young man. 10. May Heaven reward you for all that you have done for me! 11. I didn't think that he was so near here. 12. Had he had the use of his eyes, he would not have gone there. 13. What is the matter with him? He appears very sad. 14. What were you doing in the kitchen when I found you? 15. I doubt if he comes to-day. 16. You must offer to make good the wrong you have done. 17. Excuse me, sir, but I am engaged for the waltz. 18. Would to God that he had never come! 19. Let him consider what he is doing if he wants us to continue to be his friends. 20. I wish you could go along with us; I am sure you would enjoy yourself. 21. If I had known that you were coming, I should not have gone out. 22. If I were he, I should want her to know what I was doing. 23. Let them play tennis to-day, to-morrow they will have to go to school.

### 2

1. It is very cold, yet I don't believe it is quite so cold as it was yesterday. 2. God grant that he may come back safe and sound! 3. If he had seen her, perhaps he would have changed his mind. 4. Two months ago you told me you were coming to visit me; why haven't you come? 5. He will leave as soon as he finds something to do. 6. It seems that he has lost his head completely. 7. I shall come whenever you please. 8. How far is it from Paris to Tours? I should like very much to visit the old castles of Touraine. 9. God *preserve you* from ever undergoing what I have undergone! 10. I

have sold my house, do you know who has bought it? 11. It is a man whom you are well acquainted with and about whom I have often spoken to you. 12. We are very much flattered by this visit. I regret that Madame Lubin is not in. 13. As soon as we had finished dinner we went out. 14. Would to God that men might understand their real interests! 15. Have you seen my cousin?—No, I did not know that he had come. 16. I have a headache to-day and I can't go out; you will have to do without me. 17. I should like you to write me as often as possible. 18. I don't know who can play cards with me after you leave. 19. Let him come in, I want you to become acquainted with him. 20. I am sorry you cannot go with us, we are hoping to be back before sunset.

3

1. My wife goes to church every evening when the Angelus rings, whatever the weather may be; it is a habit of fifty years. 2. When we learned that your carriage had been stopped by thieves we were afraid that they had killed you. 3. Nothing is the matter with me, I feel perfectly well. 4. It is unfortunate that that affair turned [out] badly. 5. Who would be astonished if, under such circumstances, he lost all courage and all hope? 6. However it may be, I am more than ever decided on that trip. 7. How far is it from he e to London? Can we make the journey in six days? 8. Do you have to wear glasses? 9. Have you done your exercise?—No, I haven't done it yet, but I shall do it before this evening. 10. It is a month to-day since I came here, and I intend to stay a week or two more before going home. 11. If she had been less energetic, she would have given way under this double shock which she has just had. 12. One would have said that the trees, having wept all night, were letting their last tears fall. 13. How do you expect me to remember what I was thinking four years ago? 14. I am anxious to go to a place where it rains as little as possible. 15. It would be better for you to stay here; we are hoping for good weather to-morrow. 16. Just let him come in; I want to tell him what I think of him (*lui dire son fait*). 17. We give nothing so freely as advice.

## LESSON XVIII

### PARTICIPLES

**129.** Present Participle.—The present participle, when used as a verb to express action, is invariable:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Une mère aimant ses enfants.** | A mother loving her children. |

**130.** When used as a verbal adjective to express a quality, condition, or state, it agrees like any other adjective:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Une mère aimante.** | A loving mother. |

**131.** When preceded by the preposition **en** the present participle is used as a gerund, and is invariable. In this case it is equivalent to a subordinate clause, and generally expresses a simultaneous action, or a relation of time, cause or manner, its subject being the same as that of the leading verb:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Il se promène en lisant.** | He walks while reading. |
| **Ne lisez pas cela en vous couchant.** | Do not read that on going to bed. |

**132.** Past Participle.—The past participle, without auxiliary, is treated like an adjective and agrees with the word qualified:

| | |
|---|---|
| **La ville, attaquée par les ennemis, résista.** | The town, attacked by the enemies, resisted. |

**133.** With the auxiliary **être** in passives, and in intransitive verbs of motion (not with reflexives), the past participle agrees with the subject:

| | |
|---|---|
| **La ville fut attaquée.** | The town was attacked. |
| **Ils sont venus.** | They have come. |

**134.** With the auxiliary **avoir**, or with **être** with reflexive verbs, the past participle agrees with a *preceding* direct object:

| | |
|---|---|
| **La ville que les ennemis ont attaquée, s'est rendue.** | The town which the enemy attacked has surrendered. |
| **La fleur qu'il a trouvée.** | The flower he has found. |

**135.** The past participle is invariable:

1. If the object follows the verb:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Elles ont acheté des fleurs.** | They have bought some flowers. |

2. If the object which precedes the verb is indirect:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Elle s'est acheté des fleurs.** | She bought some flowers for herself. |

3. In the compound tenses of impersonal verbs:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Les grands chaleurs qu'il a fait!** | What hot weather we have had! |

4. With accusatives of time, weight, price, etc. (adverbial accusatives):

| | |
|---|---|
| **Les deux heures que j'ai couru.** | The two hours that I have been running. |
| **Vingt francs! ce livre ne les a jamais valu!** | Twenty francs! this book has never been worth that! |

**136.** The past participle, fo lowed by an infinitive, is variable when its direct object is a preceding noun or pronoun; it is invariable if the infinitive itself is the direct object:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Les artistes que j'ai vus peindre.** | **Les paysages que j'ai vu peindre.** |
| **Nous les avons vus courir.** | **Ces noix, je les ai vu porter au moulin.** |
| **Je les ai entendus louer leurs ennemis.** | **Je les ai entendu louer par leurs ennemis.** |

**137.** Note also the follow ng sentences:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Les enfants que leur mère a couchés.** | **La nuit que nous avons couché à l'hôtel.** |
| **Les personnes que nous avons tant pleurées.** | **Qui sait combien d'années nous avons pleuré.** |

| | |
|---|---|
| **Les caisses que nous avons pesées.** | **Les deux kilogrammes que cette caisse a pesé.** |
| **Cet orateur a créé une langue que lui seul a parlée.** | **Les deux heures que cet orateur a parlé.** |

**138.** IDIOMATIC PHRASES WITH **faire.**

| | |
|---|---|
| **Faites-le entrer.** | Show him in. |
| **Qu'est-ce que cela me fait?** | What is that to me? |
| **Il fait froid, du vent.** | It is cold, windy. |
| **Il fait le malade.** | He pretends to be ill. |
| **C'en est fait de lui.** | It's all over with him. |
| **Nous ne faisons que d'arriver.** | We have only just come. |
| **Il fait de son mieux.** | He does his best. |
| **Cela ne se fait pas.** | That's never done. |
| **Cela fait mal.** | That hurts. |
| **Je suis fait à cela.** | I am accustomed to that. |
| **Que voulez-vous que j'y fasse?** | How can I help it? |
| **Il se fait tard.** | It is getting late. |
| **Je lui ai fait voir le chemin.** | I showed him the road. |
| **Allez-vous sortir par le temps qu'il fait?** | Are you going out in such weather? |
| **Je fais faire une robe de soie.** | I am having a silk dress made. |
| **Il n'a plus que faire d'étudier.** | He has no need of studying any more. |

## EXERCISE XVIII

I

1. The people whom I invited to dinner are very late in coming. 2. This man has served us faithfully. 3. The workmen sing while they work. 4. He talks incessantly, tiring everybody with the tale of his adventures. 5. He is accustomed to heat and cold. 6. The enemy has made itself master of the town. 7. A man who excels in his profession always succeeds. 8. He laughed as he looked at me. 9. My letter has already gone. 10. We imagined that they were deceiving us. 11. I shall have him punished. 12. How can I help it? I told him he was wrong. 13. He has always paid me the amounts that he owed me. 14. She let herself die of hunger. 15. It is getting late, I must go home. 16. I can't go out in such weather, I have a cold now. 17. He left the oad which he had resolved to follow.

18. Unforeseen circumstances prevent us from going out. 19. Those letters which I wrote to you—did you receive them? 20. He is doing his best, we must have patience with him. 21. Mary, seated on her chair, appeared absorbed in her thoughts. 22. Oftentimes it is not talent, but wealth, which is honored in this world. 23. The interior of the chapel is decorated with pictures. 24. Do you not see him coming? He is near the church. 25. Our friends went away this morning; I am hoping to see them in Paris.

2

1. How do you like the dress which I have had made? 2. These men are unjust, I have seen them refuse you favors which you had deserved. 3. You should have given it back to me sooner, for I might have had need of it. 4. I must send for a cab; it is getting late and I must be at home before it gets dark. 5. They said that they had gone into that prison the most innocent of men, and that they had come out of it the most guilty. 6. It is windy I know, but I am accustomed to everything. 7. We must consider as lost the days that we spend in idleness. 8. I have heard them praising their enemies. 9. You have loved your neighbor if you have rendered him all the services you could. 10. God gave men neither cannons nor bayonets, and they have made cannons and bayonets for themselves in order to destroy each other. 11. I am having a house built. 12. He pretends to be ill, but I am sure he is as well as I am. 13. Many systems of philosophy have succeeded each other since Socrates. 14. The lady for whose house I offered eighty-five thousand francs has just sold it for ninety thousand. 15. What is the weather to me? I am not afraid of the wind nor of the cold either. 16. My mother and sister went to Paris last year; they enjoyed themselves very much. 17. All those books and many more have been bought during the last year. 18. While traveling I visited the most interesting towns of Europe.

3

1. The tragedy which I saw played last week was not so good as those of Racine. 2. I have reasons for being persuaded that you

had never spoken to her about me. 3. He has only just gone out, he will be back in a moment. 4. Confucius, in speaking of men, said: I have seen some who were little fitted for science, but I have never seen any who were incapable of virtue. 5. Show them to my brother. 6. How I long to receive a letter from him! It is already more than two weeks since I have received any. 7. He has no need of a music-master any more; he plays the piano very well. 8. As for those people, the better I have known them, the less I have esteemed them. 9. They went out of the town, drums beating and flags unfurled. 10. Who is this gentleman?—He is the son of the lady whose acquaintance you made yesterday and with whom you are to dine this evening. 11. We are growing old without noticing it. 12. I am having a coat made by the same tailor who made yours. 13. God has made our soul in his image and has made it capable of knowing him and of loving him. 14. There were a great many people killed on both sides (*de part et d'autre*). 15. He dances better than he ever did. 16. We have written each other many letters during the past year. 17. There is the man I heard sing last night. 18. I went away without saying good-by; so many people were coming when I left. 19. Seriously speaking, what do you think will be the outcome of this war?

## LESSON XIX

### THE INFINITIVE

#### I

#### The Infinitive without Preposition

**139.** The infinitive without any preposition is used:

1. As subject of a sentence:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Mentir est honteux.** | It is shameful to lie. |

2. As a predicate after **être, paraître, sembler, être sensé**, etc.:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Le temps paraît s'éclaircir.** | It seems to be clearing off. |

3. As logical subject after some impersonal verbs, as **il faut, il semble, il vaut mieux** (**autant**), etc.:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Il vaut mieux plier que rompre.** | It is better to bend than to break. |
| **Il faut y aller.** | We must go there. |

*Note.*—A **de**, however, is generally required before the second infinitive in a comparison:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Il vaut mieux lire les pièces que de les voir.** | It is better to read the plays than to see them. |

4. As object or complement after verbs of will, of thought, of perception, of motion, and after the modal auxiliaries **vouloir, pouvoir, devoir, falloir**, etc.:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Je sais faire cela.** | I know how to do that. |
| **Je dois partir.** | I must go. |
| **Puis-je entrer?** | May I come in? |
| **Je crois avoir raison.** | I think I am right. |
| **J'allais le voir.** | I was going to see him. |

5. In elliptical expressions:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Que faire?** | What is to be done? |
| **Pourquoi fuir?** | Why flee? |
| **Voir page six.** | See page six. |

## II

## THE INFINITIVE WITH PREPOSITIONS

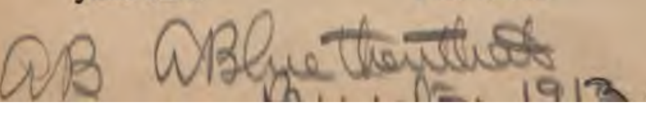
**140.** While in English the present participle is used after a preposition, in French the infinitive is used, except after **en**, which takes the present participle:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Il s'abstient de parler.** | He abstains from talking. |
| **Il commença par nous injurier.** | He began by insulting us. |
| **Il parle sans penser.** | He speaks without thinking. |

**141.** THE INFINITIVE WITH **à**.—Preceded by the preposition **à** the infinitive is used:

1. As direct object after certain transitive verbs:

| | |
|---|---|
| **J'aime à lire.** | I like to read. |



2. As complement after verbs denoting tendency, purpose, occupation:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Il fut invité à s'expliquer.** | He was invited to explain himself. |
| **Il cherche à vous nuir.** | He seeks to harm you. |
| **Il a réussi à le voir.** | He succeeded in seeing him. |

3. As the complement of adjectives and nouns denoting purpose, fitness, tendency, distinction, both with active and passive force:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Prêt à vous accompagner.** | Ready to accompany you. |
| **Une chose facile à faire.** | A thing easily done. |
| **Vous êtes trop prompt à parler.** | You are too quick to speak. |

**142.** The Infinitive with **de**.—The infinitive with **de** is used:

1. As logical subject after most impersonal verbs excepting after **il faut, il semble, il vaut mieux (autant)**, which take the direct infinitive (see above, § 139, 3):

| | |
|---|---|
| **Il est facile d'apprendre cela.** | It is easy to learn that. |
| **Il me tarde de vous voir.** | I long to see you. |

2. As object or complement of verbs implying separation, source of action, etc.:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Il cessa de parler.** | He ceased to speak. |
| **Vous m'empêchez de travailler.** | You prevent me from working. |

3. As complement of nouns and adjectives, except such as are indicated in §§ 139, 4; 141, 3:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Le désir de vivre.** | The desire to live. |
| **Content de rester.** | Satisfied to remain. |

## III

## The Infinitive Instead of a Subordinate Clause

**143.** 1. When the subject of a dependent clause is identical with the subject or object (direct or indirect) of the

principal clause, an infinitive construction usually takes the place of a **que** clause:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Je crois avoir raison.** | I think I am right. |
| **Dites-lui de ne pas se fâcher.** | Tell him not to get angry. |

2. When the subject of both verbs is the same, **afin de, avant de, de crainte de, de peur de, pour, sans, après, de façon à, de manière à,** + an infinitive are generally used instead of **afin que,** etc., + a finite verb:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Je viens pour vous le dire.** | I come to tell it to you. |
| **Il étudie afin d'être savant.** | He studies in order to be learned. |
| *But,* **Je dis cela afin que vous le sachiez.** | I say that in order that you may know it. |
| **Vous la verrez avant qu'elle parte.** | You will see her before she leaves. |

**144.** Note the following constructions with **entendre, faire, laisser, sentir, voir,** + an infinitive:

1. When the infinitive is intransitive the subject of the infinitive, if expressed, has the form of a direct object:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Je l'ai fait écrire.** | I made him write. |
| **J'ai entendu dire cela.** | I have heard that said. |

2. When the infinitive itself has a direct object, the subject of the infinitive takes the form of an indirect object (i.e. a pronoun in the dative or a noun preceded by **à**):

| | |
|---|---|
| **Je lui ai fait écrire une lettre.** | I made him write a letter. |
| **Je le lui ai fait écrire.** | I made him write it. |
| **J'ai entendu dire cela à mon père.** | I heard my father say that. |

3. Note the active construction in French where we use the passive:

| | |
|---|---|
| **J'ai fait faire un habit.** | I have had a coat made. |
| **Je l'ai entendu dire.** | I have heard it said. |

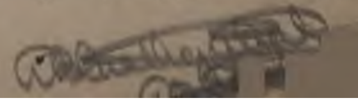
**145.** IDIOMATIC PHRASES.

| | |
|---|---|
| Il vient de rentrer. | He has just come in. |
| Il vient d'arriver un accident | An accident has just happened. |
| Je n'ai pas compris à quoi il voulait en venir. | I did not understand what he was driving at. |
| Nous en sommes venus aux mains. | We came to blows. |
| S'il vient à neiger demain. | If it should snow to-morrow. |
| A propos, qu'est-il devenu ? | By the way, what has become of him ? |
| Vous arrivez à propos. | You come very opportunely. |
| Je ne m'y connais pas. | I am not a judge of it. |
| Qu'importe ! | What does it matter! |
| Cela s'achète n'importe où. | You can buy that anywhere. |
| Prenez n'importe quoi, cela fera l'affaire. | Take anything you like, it is sure to do. |

EXERCISE XIX

I

1. I promise to write to you every week. 2. There is a gentleman down-stairs who desires to speak to you. 3. What does it matter after all? 4. We all have strength enough to bear the ills of others. 5. I did not know how to excuse myself. 6. Do not go out before speaking to me. 7. By dint of studying he has become learned. 8. He has always something wonderful to relate. 9. You are going to play, we are going for a walk. 10. What piece are they playing to-night? 11. By the way, why don't you take a walk to-day? 12. The Italians seem to be very fond of the theater. 13. There is nothing to be angry about or to be astonished at either. 14. I don't think I can finish them before the fifth of next month. 15. This pen is neither yours nor his, it is mine. 16. I know what you have to say to me, but I haven't the strength to listen to it. 17. One would say that he can do everything. 18. She does nothing but chatter. 19. What is to be done? In such weather we can do nothing. 20. May I come into your room? 21. By what a man does we can judge of his principles. 22. He had just told me not to go when your letter came. 23. What can we do now? I am tired of writing. 24. No, you are too young to do



this. 25. Where can I have my coat mended? 26. My father is going to have a house built next year. 27. Make him keep still; I have to study. 28. He let his sister do anything she pleased. 29. Why don't you begin to study now instead of playing?

2

1. We go for a walk every day. 2. Tell me where I am to sit. 3. He did not know whom to accuse of it. 4. The older I grow the more I suffer from being alone. 5. Whether you like it or not, you ought to obey your superiors. 6. There is no shame in being poor. 7. The children could do what they liked (*avoir beau faire*), she never got angry. 8. He has no thought of (*n'avoir garde de*) buying a watch, he hasn't a cent. 9. We rarely repent of speaking little, but very often of speaking much. 10. I am to go at eleven o'clock. 11. What distresses me most is to see the boys kill the birds. 12. True eloquence consists in saying all that is necessary and in saying only what is necessary. 13. The greatest pleasure of a miser is to contemplate his treasure. 14. This child has grown a great deal (*bien*) in a short (*peu*) time. 15. Our laws do not condemn a person without his having been heard and examined. 16. This poet has just published a new poem. 17. They sent at once for a doctor, but it was already too late. 18. Where do you have your clothes made? 19. Please show me how to play this game; I have never seen it before. 20. I don't dare to tell him; I am afraid he will be angry. 21. The porter will carry your trunk down-stairs; shall I have him do so at once? 22. He said he was not a judge of (*en*) poetry. 23. They almost came to blows about nothing. 24. He talked for an hour without my knowing what he was driving at. 25. Oh, anything will do! 26. There was something peculiar about him which I did not like; I distrust people like that.

3

1. I don't remember ever having been so thirsty as I was yesterday; it was so hot all day long. 2. He pretends to be a critic, although everybody knows he is not a judge of music. 3. It is of no use to

ask a miser for money, he will never give you any. 4. A dreadful accident had just happened when I came to the river. 5. He spent the night walking in his room, and, in the morning, he went out without saying anything to any one. 6. What has become of your cousin? —I haven't seen him for two months, he doesn't write, and I really don't know what to think of it. 7. He would often speak of what there was to be done for agriculture. 8. Where will you be one week from to-day? 9. What do you suppose he was driving at? They all looked at each other in amazement while he was speaking. 10. I told you to keep (*prendre*) to the right, but you wouldn't do it; you always think you know it all. 11. He is so serious when he has done anything, that one would scarcely take the liberty of speaking to him about it. 12. It remains for you to answer me and to prove to me that I am wrong. 13. We should gain more by allowing ourselves to be seen such as we are than by trying to appear what we are not. 14. Your brothers haven't permission to go to the theater, so you will not be able to go either. 15. The waiter let fall a plate in his effort to serve the guest quickly. 16. I have tried to make him decide (to decide him) to go south for his health. 17. It began to rain just after we had started, so that we were wet through when we reached home. 18. Why don't you ask your friends to come in? You may show them upstairs if you like. 19. You need not be astonished, time passes more quickly here than you would think, more quickly even than I myself should have believed.

## LESSON XX

### ADVERBS

**146.** Position of Adverbs.

1. With simple tenses the adverb, or a short adverbial phrase, regularly stands after the verb, and with compound tenses between the auxiliary and the participle:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Il se porte bien.** | He is well. |
| **Il a bien étudié.** | He has studied well. |
| **Il est à peine arrivé.** | He has but just come. |

2. The following adverbs must not be placed between the auxiliary and the participle: **ailleurs, autrefois, aujourd'hui, hier, demain, partout, tôt, tard, ici, là**:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Je suis arrivé aujourd'hui.** | I came to-day. |

3. For the sake of emphasis some adverbs, especially those of place or time, may be placed at the beginning of the clause or sentence:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Jamais homme ne mourut avec plus de courage.** | Never did a man die more bravely. |

4. Adverbs of negation (**ne pas**, etc.), most adverbs of quantity (**peu**, **beaucoup**, etc.), and short adverbs like **bien, mieux, mal, etc.**, precede an infinitive:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Je puis ne pas le faire.** | I am able not to do it. |

5. Adverbs modifying nouns, adjectives, adverbs, or phrases, usually precede:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Bien bon.** | Very good. |
| **Assez de pain.** | Bread enough. |

*Note.*—Notice the use of adjectives as adverbs and *vice versa*:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Nous sommes arrivés les premiers.** | We arrived first. |
| **Cette demoiselle est bien.** | This young lady is pretty. |

**147.** Adverbs of Affirmation.—The affirmative adverb **oui** is replaced by **si (si fait)** in contradiction or correction:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Ne savez-vous pas votre leçon?—Si.** | Don't you know your lesson?—Yes. |
| **Tu as la fièvre!—Non, mon père.—Si fait.** | You have a fever!—No, father.—Yes you have. |

**148.** Adverbs of Negation.—With verbs the negative usually consists of two parts: **ne** before the verb, and **pas**, **point** (stronger than **pas**), **guère** (scarcely), **jamais** (never),

**plus** (no longer), **rien** (nothing), **personne** (no one), etc., after the verb (see § 146, 1 and 4):

| | |
|---|---|
| **Je ne l'ai jamais vu.** | I have never seen him. |
| **Personne n'est venu.** | No one has come. |
| **Je n'ai rien vu.** | I have seen nothing. |

*Note.*—When the verb is not expressed, **ne** is also omitted and the second part alone forms the negative:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Avez-vous été à Rome?—Jamais.** | Have you been in Rome?—Never. |

**149.** Ne alone may express negation:

1. With the following verbs: **pouvoir, oser, cesser, importer, savoir**; with **savoir** in the sense of **pouvoir** the **pas** or **point** must be omitted:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Je n'ose le dire.** | I do not dare to tell it. |
| **Il ne cesse de gronder.** | He doesn't cease finding fault. |
| **Je ne saurais le faire.** | I cannot do it. |

2. In questions and exclamations introduced by **qui**, 'who', and **que**, 'why':

| | |
|---|---|
| **Qui ne s'en fâcherait ?** | Who would not be displeased? |
| **Que ne le disiez-vous ?** | Why did you not say so? |

3. After negation, either expressed or implied, thus after **il n'y a pas, sans, peu**, etc.:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Il n'y a personne qui ne le sache.** | There is no one who does not know it. |

4. After **il y a . . . que, depuis que, voilà . . . que**, but only when the verb is in a compound tense:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Il y a (voilà) deux mois que je ne l'ai vu.** | I have not seen him for two months. |

5. Often after **si**, 'if', especially in short clauses:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Vous y avez été, si je ne me trompe.** | You have been there, if I am not mistaken. |

**150.** IDIOMATIC PHRASES WITH **tenir.**

| | |
|---|---|
| **Je n'y tiens pas.** | I do not care about it. |
| **Qu'à cela ne tienne.** | Never mind that; don't let that be any objection. |
| **Je ne sais à quoi m'en tenir.** | I don't know what to make of it. |
| **Est-ce que vous tenez à y être à temps?** | Are you anxious to be there on time? |
| **S'il ne tenait qu'à moi cela serait bientôt fait.** | If it depended only on me it would soon be done. |
| **Cela tient à ce que c'est un parvenu.** | That comes of his being an upstart. |
| **S'en tenir à.** | To rely on, to abide by, to content oneself with. |

## EXERCISE XX

### I

1. He often came to see me when I was sick. 2. He has suffered so much that he does not know what it is to be well. 3. He has been reading several hours consecutively, almost without stirring. 4. We have been working very conscientiously, but the day was not long enough for us to finish our task entirely. 5. You do not wish to do it, nor I either (*ni moi non plus*). 6. It is there that he is living, he has one of the most beautiful houses in town. 7. He jumped over the wall, and quickly reached the house. 8. There are many people who think one can learn French in three months; these same persons, after six months of study, cannot even say to you in French: I have just written; it has just struck ten; I should like very much to know exactly. 9. I have never spoken to him about it, I see him very rarely. 10. Few people are content with their lot. 11. Ask him how much this book cost him; it is the prettiest volume I have ever seen. 12. It seems to me that you have just told me the contrary. 13. Have you any matches?—Yes, I have; how many do you want? 14. Tell me, where were you a week ago at this hour? 15. She is not more than seventeen years old. 16. Have you had a good time this afternoon? 17. Yes, I was sorry to come back so early. 18. He is a man who does not keep his promises. 19. He is very fond of (*tenir à*) money. 20. I abide by your decision. 21. I know now what to think of it.

2

1. He does nothing but laugh; tell him to be more serious. 2. He has been sick since I saw him. 3. I pity him so much the less because he has deserved his fate. 4. He has been talking so much that he is becoming hoarse. 5. I have been looking at you for a long time; I thought I recognized you, but I was not sure of it. 6. Without doubt you wrote to him, but I do not believe he received the letter. 7. We cannot hear them; next time we must have better seats. 8. He is far from being as intelligent as his brother. 9. Be very careful what you do. 10. For the present I cannot tell you any more. 11. Why are you going so early?—You must have risen before sunrise. 12. We have plenty of time; let us go as far as that big tree over there. 13. After having hesitated for a long time, he told him at last that he would consent. 14. Do take some sugar!—After you, sir;—how many lumps will you have? 15. You were there at half-past five, weren't you?—I? not at all, I had just arrived from New York. 16. How many apples have I? guess!—Ten!—Oh no; more! 17. He will find our letter to-morrow morning when he opens his door; but we shall already be far away. 18. Send for the doctor and tell him to come as soon as possible. 19. What is the matter with you? you look so pale. 20. Is the evil that one has done forgotten sooner than the good? 21. She has done what you will never do; she has lived for others. 22. He has told you the truth and he keeps his word. 23. He clings fast (*tenir beaucoup*) to life. 24. He is timid; that comes from his not going out in (*fréquenter*) society.

3

1. I am not so prejudiced in his favor that I do not see his faults. 2. However clever you may be, you will not succeed in it. 3. This house is all upside down; it would seem that no one is living in it. 4. Perhaps he will come, but I am afraid he will not feel any better to-day than he did yesterday. 5. Not only must we have pity on the poor, we must help them too. 6. You are far from having paid me all that you owe me. 7. This business has detained me more than *I expected*. 8. He is not nearly (*à beaucoup près*) so rich as people

say. 9. How much are these apples?—Two cents each. 10. It will not be my fault (*tenir à*), if (*que*) he does not succeed in his plan. 11. This page is badly written, and that one also; you are going from bad to worse. 12. I am anxious to convince you of the truth. 13. How long has it been since you have seen him? 14. That suits me perfectly, thank you; I shall be at your house before sunset. 15. Without doubt I should have told you that I did not write well; but I did not dare to, I was afraid you would be angry with me. 16. What! you are going out in such weather? there is a foot of snow, don't you know that? 17. I don't know what keeps (*tenir*) me from forsaking him altogether. 18. I don't know what stopped me short, right in the middle (*au beau milieu*) of my sentence. 19. Run as fast as you can (*au plus vite*).—I have done nothing but run all day long; I am very tired. 20. In case he comes, tell him to wait till I return. 21. What have I done to you?—Nothing, but it seemed to me that you had a grudge against me.

## LESSON XXI

### PLEONASTIC NE

**151.** A **ne** is frequently found in a **que** clause where there is no corresponding negation in English, thus:

1. After **empêcher**, 'prevent', **éviter**, 'avoid':

| | |
|---|---|
| **La pluie empêche que nous ne sortions.** | The rain prevents us from going out. |

2. After expressions of fear or apprehension: **craindre, redouter, appréhender, avoir peur, de crainte que, de peur que,** except when negative, or interrogative with implied negation:

| | | |
|---|---|---|
| | **Je crains qu'il ne vienne.** | I fear he will come. |
| *But,* | **Je ne crains pas qu'il vienne.** | I am not afraid that he will come. |
| | **Craignez-vous qu'il vienne?** | Are you afraid that he will come? |

*Note.*—If the dependent clause is to be made negative, the full negation **ne . . . pas** is used:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Je crains qu'il ne vienne pas.** | I fear he will not come. |

3. Usually after expressions of doubt or denial (**douter, nier, etc.**), when they are negative or interrogative with implied negation:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Je ne doute pas qu'il ne vienne.** | I do not doubt that he will come. |
| **Doutez-vous que je ne dise la vérité ?—Non.** | Do you doubt that I speak the truth ? —No. |
| **Doutez-vous que je dise la vérité ?—Oui.** | Do you doubt that I speak the truth ? —Yes. |

4. After **il tient à** and **il s'en faut,** when used negatively or interrogatively, or with **peu, guère,** etc.:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Il ne s'en faut pas de beaucoup qu'il ne réussisse.** | He comes near succeeding. |
| *But,* **Il tient à moi que cela se fasse.** | It depends upon me whether this is done. |

5. After **à moins que,** 'unless', or **que** used for **à moins que:**

| | |
|---|---|
| **Je ne le ferai pas à moins qu'il ne le fasse.** | I shall not do it unless he does. |

6. After a comparative, or a comparative expression, as **autrement, plus, mieux,** etc., when used affirmatively:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Il est plus riche qu'il ne l'était.** | He is richer than he was. |
| *But,* **Il n'est pas plus riche qu'il était.** | He is not richer than he was. |

*Notice.*—It must be borne in mind that there are many exceptions to the above rules for the use of **ne.**

**152.** IDIOMATIC PHRASES.

LA PART, LE PARTI, LA PARTIE

| | |
|---|---|
| **La part du lion.** | The lion's share. |
| **Je lui ai fait part de mes inquiétudes.** | I told him of my uneasiness. |
| **Dites-lui que vous venez de ma part.** | Tell him you come from me. |
| **Nous le savons de bonne part.** | We have it on good authority. |
| **Le parti républicain.** | The republican party. |
| **Prendre son parti.** | To make up one's mind, to resign oneself. |

| | |
|---|---|
| **Prendre un parti.** | To come to a decision. |
| **De parti pris.** | Deliberately, with a foregone conclusion. |
| **Ce livre a quatre parties.** | This book has four parts. |
| **Faire une partie de tennis.** | To play a game of tennis. |
| **Faire une partie à la campagne.** | To take an excursion into the country. |

### PLUS, DAVANTAGE

**Plus** is used in a direct comparison, and is followed by **que** or **de**; **davantage** is always used absolutely, and cannot be followed by a complement (i.e. an adjective, **de**, or **que**):

| | |
|---|---|
| **Votre frère est plus agé que vous.** | Your brother is older than you. |
| **Vous avez dix ans, elle en a davantage.** | You are ten years old, she is older. |

**défi**, *m.*, challenge.
**défiance**, *f.*, distrust; diffidence.
**défier**, to challenge.
**se défier de**, to mistrust, to beware of.
**puis**, then, after that.
**alors**, then, at that time.
**ensuite**, then, next.
**donc**, then, therefore.

## Exercise XXI

### I

1. He does nothing but laugh. 2. Your sister is older than you. 3. I haven't spoken to him for six months. 4. I shall never pardon him as long as I live (*de ma vie*). 5. His diffidence was so great that he did not dare to speak although he knew it all. 6. Is there any one whom he does not slander (*médire de*)? 7. God forbid that he should ever say any such thing! 8. He is less rich than people suppose. 9. He is not richer than he was twenty years ago. 10. Should you not like to play a game of golf this afternoon? 11. I can never speak without being interrupted. 12. Don't stir lest he see you. 13 Why do you always take Charles's side? 14. He came near succeeding. 15. What more do you wish? 16. It depends upon me

whether that is done. 17. My brother is two inches taller than I am. 18. I am afraid he will not come. 19. That is not possible (*se pouvoir*), so don't let us think about it. 20. I promise to forget what you have said and not to speak about it to any one. 21. The boy just brought me a letter from my father. 22. I am not in (have not) the habit of denying what I have said. 23. Come and see me before you leave. 24. Can any one be more happy than you! 25. I have only ten francs, you must have more than that. 26. Neither he nor his friend was able to come. 27. I scarcely slept a wink last night. 28. Do you fear that you will not be ready in time?

2

1. His cold prevented him from going to the concert. 2. He has more books than his brother. 3. You may be sure he will not go out unless the weather is fine. 4. You are twenty years old, but your sister is older. 5. Most of his friends came to see him before he went away. 6. That is part of his system. 7. The doctor looks worried, I fear he thinks the boy will not get well. 8. He is happier than a king. 9. I am not sure that we can catch the train, it is later than I thought it was. 10. He has changed very much since I saw him. 11. We shall dine in town and then we shall all go for a drive. 12. I came very near drowning while skating on the river some days ago. 13. He easily got reconciled to it. 14. It must be a year or more since I saw him. 15. It does not matter, I shall have it mended to-morrow. 16. She is very rich and very beautiful, she is a good match. 17. I do not doubt that he will come since he said he would. 18. That was the fashion then, but now it seems ridiculous. 19. Do you think we shall ever be able to travel in air-ships? 20. For my part, I don't think we shall ever see that day, but wonders will never cease. 21. It was Descartes who said: I think, therefore I am. 22. What is the matter with you? You don't seem to eat as well as usual and you are less cheerful than you were yesterday. 23. I am doing my best not to think of it any more. 24. I don't like to hear a man like you say such things. 25. That is very kind of you. 26. Are you sure you have not forgotten anything? I am

so afraid something will be lost. 27. I am afraid this will grieve you, but I think it better that you should be told at once.



3

1. He never takes a trip without having some misfortune happen to him. 2. I would gladly talk to him, if I did not fear that he had changed his mind. 3. I told him at once of my misfortune and he promised to do his best to help me. 4. I do not deny that it has been said many times, but saying a thing does not make it true. 5. Tell him that I sympathize with him in his misfortune. 6. I am afraid my brother will lose his lawsuit, and in any case the affair has given him more trouble than it is worth. 7. I am very glad to find you here, it is very long since I saw you. 8. Had I been there myself, I should at any rate have had no one else to blame for the accident. 9. Let me know what you think of the book as soon as you have read it. 10. The accident was more serious than we had first thought, and it may result in the death of two of the men. 11. He had a coat made two years ago, and he has not paid for it yet. 12. Can you deny that health is preferable to wealth? 13. He was dismissed and he took it very much to heart. 14. We easily forget our faults when they are known to nobody but ourselves. 15. It is a fine thing to have much money, but it is difficult to spend it wisely. 16. This trick seems easy, but it is more difficult than you think it is. 17. Oak is a hard wood, but ebony is much harder. 18. If you had only acted according to reason and justice, no one would have condemned your conduct. 19. I am very anxious that you should not come home late. 20. Here is a good piece of advice: Do not be proud of your beauty, you have little time in which to be beautiful and a long time in which not to be beautiful. 21. Do you like it in the country? I much prefer the town for my part.



PART I

## [illegible]

[illegible] ON THE ENVELOPE.—The word **Monsieur**, etc., should be written in full:

1. Monsieur [illegible] Dupont
[illegible] Boulevard de Plainpalais
Genève
Switzerland

[illegible] by [illegible] please forward [illegible]:

2. Monsieur le Professeur [illegible]
chez Madame [illegible]
[illegible] rue de Philosophes
[illegible] Paris, France

3. Monsieur [illegible]
aux soins de Monsieur [illegible]
[illegible] rue St. Michel
Menton
(Alpes-Maritimes)

[illegible] Observe that in dates cardinal numbers (except [illegible] used, and that the names of the months [illegible] small letter. The article le is often

used before the day of the month, and occasionally the demonstrative ce is used, especially before the days of the week:

1. Paris, le 15 mars, 1902.
2. Marseilles, le 17 octobre, 1904.
3. Toulon, 1er juillet, 1905.
4. Bruxelles, 8, place St. Charles, 9 juin, 1906.
5. Ce jeudi matin.

SALUTATION.—*Monsieur*, *Madame*, *Mademoiselle*, are not so formal as the English Sir or Madam. More familiar forms are:

Cher Monsieur; Mon cher Monsieur; Cher ami; Mon cher Émile, etc.

CONCLUSION.—The form of the complimentary close of a letter varies much in French. The age, rank, and sex of the person addressed must always be taken into consideration. Some of the more common endings of a letter are:

1. Veuillez agréer, Monsieur, l'assurance de mes sentiments les plus distingués.

2. Agréez, Monsieur, l'assurance (*or* l'expression) de ma haute (*or* parfaite) considération.

3. Agréez, Monsieur, l'assurance de ma considération distinguée.

4. Agréez, Monsieur, mes salutations distinguées.

5. Veuillez agréer, Monsieur, l'expression de mes sentiments respectueux et dévoués.

Less formal endings are:

1. Recevez, mon cher ami, l'assurance de mes sentiments les plus dévoués.

2. Veuillez agréer, en attendant, l'assurance de mes meilleurs sentiments.

3. Je vous prie de croire à l'expression de mes meilleurs sentiments.

4. Je vous prie d'agréer mes amitiés les plus sincères.

In addressing ladies:

1. Veuillez accepter, Madame, mes salutations respectueuses.
2. Daignez d'agréer, Madame, l'expression de mes sentiments respectueux.
3. Je vous prie, Madame, d'agréer l'expression de mes hommages respectueux.
4. J'ai l'honneur d'être, Madame, votre très dévoué et respectueux ami.
5. Veuillez accepter, Madame, l'assurance de ma parfaite et affectueuse considération.

Among intimate friends the following endings are frequently used:

1. Bien (tout) à vous (à toi).
2. A vous de tout cœur.
3. Je vous serre cordialement (amicalement) la main.
4. Votre ami dévoué.
5. Cordialement à vous.
6. Agréez mes salutations les plus amicales.
7. Croyez à ma vive et sincère amitié.

A lady addressing a lady friend might write:

1. Toute à vous.
2. Je vous embrasse tendrement (affectueusement).
3. Votre amie affectionnée.
4. Votre bien sincère.

*Note.*—*a.* The word *Monsieur*, etc., should be written in full before proper names in the body of a letter.

*b.* The expression *considération* in the close of a letter is generally not used except to inferiors, while *haute* (*parfaite*) *considération* or *considération distinguée* may be used among equals.

Note the following expressions:

| | |
|---|---|
| **Veuillez me rappeler au bon souvenir de.** **Dites bien des choses de ma part à.** | Please remember me to. |
| **Mes amitiés chez vous.** | My regards to your family. |
| **Mille amitiés.** **Agréez mes civilités empressées.** | Kind regards. |
| **Joyeux Noël.** | Merry Christmas. |
| **Une bonne année.** | A Happy New Year. |
| **Je vous souhaite une bonne et heureuse année.** | I wish you a Happy New Year. |

New-Year's Greetings (*Souhaits de bonne année*).

1. Meilleurs vœux et souhaits, de notre part à vous, pour une heureuse nouvelle année.

2. Monsieur Gautier vous envoie ses meilleurs vœux pour l'année qui va commencer.

3. Monsieur Renard vous envoie tous ses vœux pour le renouvellement de l'année.

## Polite Notes

1. Mr. Favon regrets that a previous engagement prevents him from accepting Mr. and Mrs. Thibaut's kind (*aimable*) invitation for next Wednesday.

2. Mr. Lebrun accepts the kind invitation of Mr. and Mrs. Garnier for Thursday evening, January fifth, and is happy to have the opportunity to congratulate them upon the safe (*heureux*) return of their son.

Monday, December twenty-sixth.

3. Mr. and Mrs. Lacroix request Mr. Maillard to do them the favor (*amitié*, f.) of dining with them next Thursday at seven o'clock, and beg him to accept their best compliments (*en lui renouvellant tous leurs compliments*).

4. Geneva, Monday, April 22, 1901.

Dear Sir:

In answer to your letter of this morning I wish to say (*je vous informe*) that I shall have the honor of presenting myself at your house to-morrow, Tuesday, at eight o'clock in the evening.

*En attendant, agréez, Monsieur, mes salutations empressées.*

5. Mr. and Mrs. Meunier ask (*prier*) Mr. Mignard to give (*faire*) them the pleasure of coming to take a cup of tea with them (*chez eux*), Saturday, the ninth of March, after the lecture by (*de*) Mr. Périer.

6. Dear Mr. Meunier:

As I am not feeling very well, I intend to leave on Friday in order to spend some weeks in the south. If my departure should be postponed until next week I shall be very glad (*se faire un plaisir de*) to take a cup of tea with you on Saturday.

*Je vous prie, Monsieur, de bien vouloir agréer, ainsi que Madame Meunier, l'expression de mes sentiments distingués.*

7. Lyon, February 15, 1902.

Dear Sir:

I come from New York and I have (*je suis porteur de*) a letter of recommendation from (*de la part de*) Mr. Gazier.

Will you be kind enough to inform me of (*m'indiquer*) the day and the hour when I may (*pourrais*) present myself at your house in order to have the honor of handing (*remettre*) you the letter?

*Agréez, Monsieur, l'assurance de ma considération la plus distinguée.*

8. Dear Sir:

I hasten to answer your esteemed favor (*votre honorée*) of last evening. You will find me at home every day in the afternoon, except Tuesdays and Fridays.

*Agréez, Monsieur, mes salutations empressées.*

# PART III

## ANECDOTES

### 1. TALLEYRAND AND MADAME DE STAËL

One day Monsieur de Talleyrand was sitting between Madame de Staël and Madame Récamier, the celebrated beauty. The witty diplomat, wishing to please the two ladies, said: "I am very fortunate to-day; here I am sitting between wit and beauty."—"Yes," said the witty woman (*femme d'esprit*), "and you have neither one nor the other."

### 2. A DIPLOMATIC ANSWER

One day Madame de Staël said to Monsieur de Talleyrand: "If Madame Récamier and I should fall into the water, which one would you save?"—"Oh," answered he, "you, Madam, you know everything, you certainly know how to swim; I should save Madame Récamier."

### 3. THE STUPID PEASANT

There are peasants who are certainly not so stupid as they are generally supposed to be.—A gentleman, who had just returned to his native land after a long absence, asked one of them for news from his home (*pays*), and, among other things, if there were still a great many fools there. The peasant answered him: "Truly, sir, there are not so many as when you were there."

### 4. A GOOD RIDDANCE

The scene took place in an omnibus in Paris. Two old ladies were seated side by side. One wanted the window shut, the other wanted it open. They called the conductor to decide the question.

"Sir," said the first, "if this window remains open I am sure to catch a cold which will kill (*emporter*) me."

"Sir," said the other, "if it is closed, I am sure to die of a stroke of apoplexy."

The conductor was at a loss (neg. of *savoir*) what to do, when an old gentleman who, up to that time, had been sitting quietly (*se tenir tranquille*) in a corner of the conveyance, helped him out of the difficulty, saying: "Just leave that window open, my dear friend, that will kill one, then close (future) it, that will rid us of the other, and we shall have peace."

### 5. Talleyrand and His Valet

Talleyrand had a valet named François who always sat up for (*say* never went to bed before his master had returned) his master. At one time Talleyrand came home from his club at three o'clock in (*de*) the morning. He found the faithful François in his bedroom, sound asleep (*qui dormait profondément*) on a sofa near the fire. Instead of waking him, Talleyrand undressed quietly and went to bed. A few minutes afterward the servant awoke and exclaimed: "Past three o'clock and the beast hasn't come home yet!" Talleyrand raised his head and said very gently: "You may go to bed, François, the beast has got back to his lair."

### 6. A Cabman as Art-Critic

The celebrated painter, David, had on exhibition (*avait exposé*) one of his most beautiful pictures and happened one day by chance to be in the throng which was admiring it. He noticed a man who, from his dress, was evidently a cabman, and whose attitude expressed disdain.

"I see that you don't like that picture," the painter said to him.

"Upon my word, no!"

"It is, however, one of those before which every one stops."

"There is no reason for it! There's that fool of a painter who ... a horse whose mouth is all covered with froth although it




David said nothing, but as soon as the salon was closed he painted out (*effacer*) the froth.

### 7. A Clever Answer

A young lady was taking an examination. The examiner began to question her on music, which was her weak point (*côté*, m.).

"What is music?"

"Music," answered the young student with great assurance, "is an accomplishment (*art d'agrément*). Now, as we are not here in order to amuse ourselves, let us pass [on], if you please, to another subject."

The examiners burst out laughing; they were disarmed and the young lady was passed (*recevoir*).

### 8. A Piece of Information

"Pardon me, my friend, how much time do I need to go from Corbigny to Saint-Révérien?"

The stone-breaker raised his head and, leaning on his hammer, he observed me through his spectacles without answering.

I repeated the question, but he did not answer. He is a deaf-mute, I thought, and continued my way.

I had hardly gone (*faire*) a hundred yards, when (*que*) I heard the voice of the stone-breaker. He was calling [to] me and waving his hammer. I came back and he said to me:

"You will need two hours."

"Why didn't you tell me so at once?"

"You asked me, sir, how long it takes to go from Corbigny to Saint-Révérien. . . . It takes as long as it takes! It depends on the gait. Did you suppose (*est-ce que*) that I knew your pace? So I let you walk a little way (*bout de chemin*, m.), and now I know you will need two hours."

### 9. An Examination

"Your professor has given you some elementary ideas about bodies, hasn't he?" asked the examiner.

"Yes, sir."

"Very well. Tell me then what a transparent body is."

No answer.

"Well?"

"A transparent body is . . . I remember perfectly well . . . is . . . is . . ."

"Is a body through which you see light."

"Yes, sir."

"Very well. Since you couldn't give me a definition (use *en*), give me an example of one" (use *en*).

"For example . . . a lock."

"What! a lock!"

"Yes, since you see light through the key-hole."

### 10. Castilian Pride

A beggar wrapt in a cloak like a Spanish grandee was begging on a road leading to Madrid. A traveler who was bothered by his entreaties said to him:

"Aren't you ashamed to follow such a low profession, when you might be working?"

"Sir," answered the beggar, with Castilian pride, "it is money, not advice, that I ask you for."

### 11. A Spendthrift

The Marquis of Favières was a great borrower who never returned what he had borrowed.

One day he went to Samuel Bernard, the rich financier, and said to him:

"Sir, I am going to astonish you very much; I am the Marquis of Favières; I am not acquainted with you, and I come to borrow five hundred louis."

"Sir," answered Samuel, "I am going to surprise you much more; I am acquainted with you and I am going to lend them to you."

### 12. Wanted, a Preceptor

A woman from the country wrote to one of her friends (f.) and begged to look for a preceptor with (having) such and such qualities; the ...on was endless (did not finish). She finally wrote a second

very urgent letter. Her friend answered her: "Madam, I have been looking for a preceptor such as you desire; I have not yet found one, but if I succeed in discovering one, I promise you to marry him."

## 13. Molière and the Doctor

Molière having fallen ill on one of his trips, the keeper of the hotel where he had put up proposed to him to send for a famous doctor of the town. "By no means (*Gardez-vous-en bien*)," he said to him; "rather have the surgeon of a neighboring village come, for he perhaps will not have the impudence to kill me."

## 14. Contentment

A certain prince who had a very beautiful garden in the neighborhood of Paris, had written on the gate in large letters: "This garden will be given to him who is perfectly content." A rich miser who read it, hastened eagerly to the prince, in the hope of obtaining this magnificent garden, and told him that he was perfectly content. "Go away," said the prince, "if you were so you would not ask for my garden."

## 15. Tit for Tat

Napoleon the Third, at that time emperor of France, was one day chatting with his wife, the empress Eugénie.

As she was talking somewhat thoughtlessly, her husband said to her jokingly (*par manière de plaisanterie*): "Do you know, Madam, what difference there is between a mirror and yourself?"

"No," she answered.

"Well, my dear, the difference is that the mirror reflects without speaking and (that) you speak without reflecting."

"Ah . . . and you, sir," said Eugénie quickly, "do you know what difference there is between a mirror and you?"

"No," said Napoleon in his turn.

"Well, my dear, it is that the mirror is polished and you . . . are not!"

### 16. Rachel as Vender of Bouquets

When Rachel, the celebrated actress, who had already been admitted to the Conservatory, went to ask Provost for private lessons in (*de*) declamation, he said to her:

"Go sell bouquets, my child."

It is needless to say that the future tragedienne went away with a heavy heart.

One evening Rachel had just been playing Hermione. She had been enthusiastically applauded and called back several times. After the curtain had fallen (*baisser*) she filled her Grecian tunic with the flowers which lay strewn over (*joncher*) the stage; then falling on her knees before him who had advised her to sell bouquets she said to him playfully:

"I have followed your advice, Monsieur Provost; I am selling bouquets; will you buy some from me?"

### 17. A Lesson in Good Manners

A young lady, of very distinguished appearance (*dont l'extérieur annonçait l'extrême distinction*), stepped into a first-class car in which some young fops had taken [their] seats. One of them was already lighting a cigar. Though disconcerted for a moment by the aspect of the newcomer, he took courage and said to her:

"Madam, does the smell of a cigar annoy you?"

"I do not know, sir," answered the young lady with simple dignity, "no one has ever smoked in my presence."

### 18. An Absent-minded Professor

Great mathematicians are sometimes as naïve as they are absent-minded.

Mr. F., the learned professor of the Polytechnic School of Zurich, said naïvely to the students in his course:

"Yes, gentlemen, the central projection is one of the most difficult parts of pure mathematics. In short there are only two persons in the world who understand anything about it. . . . The other one is in Berlin."

Another time when the rain was falling (rain was falling = *pleuvoir*) in torrents his pupils waited nearly twenty minutes for him, and, very much pleased, were getting ready to leave the class-room, when Mr. F. arrives, wet through, out of breath, and holding in his hand an umbrella carefully rolled [up].

"I beg your pardon, gentlemen, for coming so late; I have been looking for my umbrella all over (in all) the house, without being able to find it." Whereupon, without hearing the burst of laughter of his students, he went and placed (to place) the umbrella he never could find (*introuvable*) in a corner, hung up his hat, and began his lecture.

### 19. The Two Rich Men

When I hear people praise some rich man who devotes large sums of his immense income to the education of children, the healing of the sick, the founding of homes for the aged, I too praise and admire him.

But while I praise and admire him, I can't help remembering (*je ne puis pas ne pas me rappeler*) a poor peasant family which had taken (*recueillir*) an orphan into its miserable hut.

"If we take Jeannie," the woman said, "it will cost us our last cent, and we shall not even have anything (*de quoi*) to buy salt [with] to salt the soup."

"Well, then, we'll eat it without salt," answered her husband.

The rich man is still far behind (*loin de*) this peasant.

### 20. Prediction of an Astrologer

An astrologer having made an unfavorable prediction to one of the ladies of the court, the king wanted to have him put to death. He summoned him and asked him if he knew the day of his death. The astrologer, who suspected what was threatening him, answered: 'Sire, I have learned by my observations that I am to die one day before your Majesty." The king was surprised by this answer, but he felt the subtlety of it and did not dare to do him any harm.

### 21. Sixtus the Fifth

While Sixtus the Fifth was as yet only the cardinal of Montalte he walked bent over, as though weakened by years and infirmities. After he had become pope he held himself very erect and spoke with a firm voice. He said to those who were astonished at this sudden change: "I walked bent over because I was looking for the keys of St. Peter, now I raise my head because I have found them."

### 22. We Must All Die

A sailor was gaily returning to (*regagner*) his ship, ready to set sail, when he was stopped by a passer-by who asked him the cause of his joy.

"I am going, sir," he answered, "to take another voyage over [the] sea; the sea is my element, my means of subsistence. I hope the voyage will be good."

"But tell me, please," resumed the passer-by, "where did your father die?"

"In a shipwreck. He and his possessions all perished."

"And your grandfather?"

"His ship sank in the open sea; no one was saved."

"And after these examples, how do you dare to embark?"

"Permit me, sir, in my turn, to ask you a few questions."

"Certainly (*Volontiers*)."

"Where did your father die?"

"In his bed."

"And your grandfather?"

"Eh, in his bed, to be sure (*parbleu*)."

"What, sir," exclaimed the sailor, "and after these examples you dare to go to bed every night?"

### 23. Except the Lord-Mayor

The actor Foote, [while] traveling in the western part of England, stopped one day at an inn for dinner. When he wanted to settle up, the innkeeper asked him if he was satisfied.

"I have dined better than any one in England," said Foote.

"Except the Lord-Mayor," said the innkeeper quickly.

"I except no one."

"You ought to except the Lord-Mayor."

Foote got angry: "Not even the Lord-Mayor," said he, emphasizing (*en appuyant sur*) each syllable.

The quarrel grew so bitter (*s'envenima au point*) that the innkeeper forced his guest to appear (*fit comparaître*) before the mayor of the place. "Mr. Foote," that venerable magistrate said to him, "you must know that it is a habit dating from times immemorial in this city always to make an exception in favor of (*pour*) the Lord-Mayor, and, in order that you may not another time forget our customs, I condemn you to a fine of one shilling or to five hours' imprisonment (to one shilling of fine, etc.) at your choice."

Foote, much exasperated, found himself obliged to pay the fine. He left the hall saying:

"I don't know a greater fool in all Christendom than this innkeeper . . . except the Lord-Mayor," he added, turning respectfully toward the magistrate.

## 24. An Ambiguous Compliment

There was at Ferney a theater where they performed the tragedies of Voltaire. The parts were played by the guests. Madame Denis, the niece of Voltaire, almost always took part in these performances (*y figurer*). She had just played the rôle of Zaïre, when a gentleman from the neighborhood came [up] to her and complimented her very highly (*lui adresse force compliments*) on her dramatic talent.

"In order to fill this rôle suitably, one ought at least to be young and pretty," said Madame Denis with feigned modesty.

"Ah, Madame," answered the gentleman naïvely, "you have certainly proved the contrary." And he went off delighted with the compliment he imagined he had paid her.

## 25. Three Sheets in the Wind

Friquel, a poet, was returning home very late one evening. He was walking alone, somewhat at random, for the fumes of wine, if

they had not clouded his brain, seemed at least to have cast a veil over his eyes.

"The deuce if I know where I am" (*s'y reconnaître*), grumbled the poet; "these confounded houses all look alike to me . . . which is mine?" And he opened his eyes wide as he tacked up (*par*) the street.

At last, under a gas-jet, his hat on one side (on the ear), he accosts a passer-by.

"Say, sir, can you tell me where Mr. Friquel lives?"

The man, recognizing the poet, answered in amazement (*ébahi*): "Why . . . you are Mr. Friquel yourself."

"I am not asking you who I am,—I know that; I am asking you where I live."

## 26. The Tip

Swift was severe with servants and was not generous with them. One day one of his friends sent his groom to him with a magnificent turbot. The man, who had already many times done like commissions without having received the slightest reward, merely laid the fish on a table, and said: "Here is a turbot that my master sends you."

"What did you say" (*Plaît-il*), exclaimed Swift, rising and leaving his desk, "is that the way (*ainsi*) to do (that one does) a commission? Here, take this seat, we'll change rôles, and another time try to profit by what I am going to teach you."

Swift then advanced respectfully toward the servant who had sat down in a large armchair, and said to him, pretending to present the turbot to him: "My master desires (*charger*) me to give you his compliments, and begs you to accept this little gift."

"It is indeed very amiable of (*à*) him," answered the valet impudently. "Here, my dear fellow, here is half a crown for you."

Swift, a little taken aback by the lesson which he received, finally (*finir par*) [burst out] laughing at the impudence of the fellow, and gave him a good fee.

## 27. Rabelais and the Cardinal

Rabelais, while dining one day with a cardinal whose physician he was, struck with his knife on the edge of a plate on which there

was a lamprey and said: "That is very indigestible." The cardinal, who thought a great deal about his health, immediately caused the plate with the lamprey to be taken away. Rabelais had it brought back for himself, and began to eat it as fast as he could (*de toutes ses forces*). When the cardinal noticed this he said to him: "What, sir, you told me that lamprey was indigestible, and yet you are eating it with such good appetite?"

"You will pardon me," Rabelais answered, "I spoke of the plate, not of the lamprey."

### 28. Bold Answer of a Calvinist Officer to Louis XIV

When they wanted to abolish Calvinism in France, Louis XIV dismissed an officer in his body-guard who professed that religion. The officer, who had received several wounds in the service of the monarch, said to him: "Sire, when I was sent to fight the enemy, I wasn't asked what my religion was; they thought that a Huguenot would serve you as well as a soldier of your religion."

"I am satisfied with your services," answered Louis XIV, "but the God that I serve is not satisfied (use *le*), and it is He who dismisses you."

"Pardon me, Sire," replied the officer, "it is not God, it is your religion."

### 29. An Unintended Insult

One day when Napoleon was surrounded by some of his principal officers he received a letter from his father-in-law, the Emperor of Austria. The letter did not please him because it showed that his father-in-law was not complying with his wishes. Napoleon always became irritated when people did not yield to his will. So he turned toward the Empress and said sharply: "Madame, your father is a *ganache* (*f.*) (blockhead)." Marie-Louise did not understand the word, and did not dare to ask for an explanation. But when the Emperor had withdrawn, she called one of the officers present and said to him: "Sir, what is a *ganache?*" Imagine, if you can, the embarrassment of the officer! How could he dare to explain this word to her Majesty after what he had just heard? "It means," he answered, "a great statesman, a great politician." Marie-Louise was very

much pleased and very much flattered by this compliment from her illustrious husband.

Some time later, on New Year's day, the day of congratulations and good wishes, M. de Cambacérès, the very celebrated juris-consult, followed by the high court of justice, appeared before the Empress, and addressed one of his most elegant compliments to her. When he had finished, the Empress said: "M. de Cambacérès, I am not able to give a suitable answer to your elegant words, but there is one thing I do want to say to you, and that is that you are the greatest (*première*) *ganache* in the whole empire." Imagine the consternation of the members of the court and the stupefaction of M. de Cambacérès!

### 30. Death of Henry IV

The fourteenth of May, 1610, Henry IV was uneasy. He could neither work nor sleep.

"Your Majesty should go out," said a guard, "and take a drive; that would cheer you up."

"You are right. Order (*Qu'on apprête*) my carriage."

As the weather was fine and warm they took an open carriage. Henry stepped into it with the dukes of Épernon and Montbazon and five other lords. They drove in the direction of (*se diriger vers*) the arsenal, where the king wanted to see Sully, who was ill. On passing from the street of Saint-Honoré into the street of the Ferronnerie (f.) a block of vehicles stopped the carriage. François Ravaillac, who had followed the carriage from the Louvre, got up on a stone, and as the king was attentively listening to a letter which the Duke of Épernon was reading, the wretch sprang forward and stabbed Henry IV twice near the heart. While the archers were arresting the assassin and leading him off to a neighboring house to get him away from the fury of the mob, the lords covered Henry IV with a mantle, and had the carriage turn back towards the Louvre. They spread the report that the king was only wounded, although he had died immediately. When the people knew the truth there was universal grief, for no king had ever been at the same time so great and good as Henry IV.

## 31. La Misère

### I

It is a very old story often told on a winter's evening in the thatched cottages of Poland. If you should ask me at what time it happened, I should have to tell you that the old men whom I consulted all replied, shaking their heads, that their grandparents declared that they had heard it related by the oldest [people] in the country, who had not been witnesses of the fact themselves, but who had (*tenir*) it from their parents. They all, however, believe it [to be] absolutely true.

In the duchy of Cracovie, and at some versts only from the capital, there lived a peasant, very poor, who had a large family to provide for (*chargé de famille*). He had, [when] quite young, married the daughter of a neighbor who likewise (*lui aussi*) lived in poverty (*misérablement*); and from the union of these two poor creatures were born eight children, all marvelously beautiful; the girls slender and white as snowdrops, the boys well-built and strong.

The oldest daughter, however, a girl whom they had named Magda, was the most beautiful of all.

She was tall, slender and graceful; her blue eyes, at the same time firm and very gentle, had an expression of tenacious energy; her face was encircled by heavy dark-red hair which, during her daily (*de tous les jours*) work, fell over her shoulders. People had an almost superstitious admiration for her, and they loved her, too, because she was good. Good she was to all, to the little ones whom she had helped to bring up, to her parents whom she consoled; and capable (*vaillante*) withal, just like a homely girl whom no one would have looked at.

You see (*C'est qu'elle*, etc.) she had quickly understood, the poor Magda, that it was necessary to work if she wanted to have any bread to eat. Never had more abject poverty been seen among peasants. They had, in fact, to do with the hardest and most wicked master who could be found for twenty leagues around. Not content with grinding down his wretched vassals and with making them pay a tithe which he tried his best to make more heavy from day to day,

he drove them, at the slightest fault, out of their little thatched cottages which he had given (*céder*) them to lodge themselves and their families [in]. Then it was begging on the frozen roads and often death.

And yet he was rich, very rich, the Count Michel Sebuski, rich through all the poverty of his peasants. He lived in a superb castle and from his sumptuous drawing-rooms he laughed at the cold (*glacé*) and bare habitations in which his vassals lived. And so they hated him over the whole extent of the country, and when, by chance, he passed, in order to visit his estates, the little children hid themselves weeping, and the young girls were afraid of his black beard and his sneering face.

In spite of all his wealth Michel Sebuski was not happy. He was conscious of the sentiments which he inspired, and was exasperated in consequence (*en*). It is the first punishment of the wicked to be deprived of all affection, and, even behind the smile on the lips, to divine the scorn and fear.

They even said in a whisper, for they scarcely liked to speak of him except behind closed doors (*si ce n'est la porte bien close*), that he had never been able to get married; all the noble young ladies of the surrounding counties whom he would have liked to marry, protested at the thought of marrying a man so brutal and so hard.

One day the Count Michel Sebuski was hunting on his domains alone, as usual, on the lookout (*en guettant*) for an occasion to give trouble to some one. Along his route he carefully noted what was not in accordance with his good pleasure or what might give him a chance (*lui permettre*) to extort more money.

"Good," he said to himself, "that brute of a Bartek must have cut down a tree here; I'll have him knouted, and he'll pay me twice the value of it."

And farther [on]: "Oh, oh! the harvest of Jarzinski will be superb this year; it is only just (*de toute justice*) that instead of one-tenth, one-half should come (*revenir*) to me. The rogue will still have too much for his share. Well, well! (*allons!*) it is a good thing to visit one's property from time to time."

While making these reflections the count kept walking [along] (*marcher*), and soon he arrived on the lands which our peasant culti-

vated. There, in a large meadow, very busy turning hay with two of her young brothers, he saw Magda, who had not noticed him.

"Hey, you there!" (*Hé vous autres!*) cried he. Then he stopped suddenly, struck by the marvelous beauty of the young girl.

Magda had turned around when she heard his voice, and, at the sight of the count, she had flushed with fear, and that flush which had spread over her white face, while her frightened eyes grew larger, made her still more beautiful.

"Come, my beautiful child," said the count, suddenly pacified, "don't be afraid, I do not wish you any harm; only tell me where your father is; I want to speak to him immediately."

"He is at the house," said Magda, still all trembling.

"Well, take (*conduire*) me to him."

The young girl threw [down] her fork, tied up her hair hastily, and set out, followed by Michel Sebuski.

Fortunately the house was not far [away], for poor Magda's legs could hardly carry her, and she didn't even answer the few words of the count, which she scarcely heard on account of her confusion.

An infernal idea had just sprung up in the mind of Michel. "Never," said he to himself, "has there been a more beautiful girl in Poland, and, since the women of my rank disdain me, I'll marry her. Here at least I am the master, and no one will dare to resist me."

At last they reached the peasant's hut, into which the count entered first.

"Ianko," said he bruskly, "I want to have a word with you" (*j'ai à te parler*). Ianko, frightened, had risen, and was stammering something, evidently expecting some misfortune.

Michel Sebuski let him speak, and cast a wicked glance around in (*sur l'intérieur de*) the wretched hut. Never had the poverty of his vassals struck him so much (*à ce point*). For furniture, a heavy wooden table; for beds, pallets, covered with coarse blankets tattered and worn. The cold leaked in through the walls (*Les murs suintaient l'hiver*); the stove itself, the enormous stove against (*adossé à*) the wall, and which took up by itself (*à lui seul*) almost half the room, was out, for the sake of economy. The boards of the ceiling were beginning to separate. The Polish winter must be very frightful in

that wretched house, incapable of sufficiently protecting those who lived in it.

It was indeed the den of poverty.

"Yes, I have something to say to you," finally interrupted the count. "It is about your child, that tall girl with the red hair. I have decided to do you a great honor; I'm going to marry her."

A thunderbolt falling on the house and burning the last resources of the family would not have caused in the peasant and in Magda greater surprise or fear. Both kept quiet; only Magda had sat down upon a stool, and, her head in her hands, was sobbing aloud.

At length Ianko ventured [to say] a few words: "Sir, we are only your humble vassals, and never . . ."

"Hold your tongue, man (*bonhomme*)!" interrupted the count angrily, "I have told you my pleasure, and that is enough." Then turning toward Magda, and trying to soften his voice, he added: "Is it necessary to shed so many tears in order to become a countess and to exchange this hovel for a castle?"

But Magda continued to wail, all horrified (*toute à l'horreur*) to think that she might become the wife of the count.

Seeing that he did not get any answer from her, Michel cried, after a moment of silence: "Listen carefully to what I tell you, Ianko; if to-morrow you do not come and bring me the consent of your daughter, I'll drive you out of my lands (*de chez moi*). I'll put you out of the country, with the order to hang you if you or any one of yours sets foot in it again." Then he abruptly turned around, whistled [to] his dogs, and left the house.

## II

Left alone (*Restée seule*) with her father, Magda threw herself into his arms and begged him to protect her and to defend her, with such tones of despair that Ianko, rough though (*que*) he was, swore to her to bear everything and to brave everything, rather than to give her to the count.

The mother and the other children soon arrived, and, informed of what had taken place, they too exclaimed that never should their

Magda marry the count. Rather a hundred times die of cold and of hunger on the highways.

All the same it was a sad evening that the peasant and his family passed. What was to become of them? Where were they to go? At least if they were poor they had always known where to meet (*rentrer*) at night; and, in spite of privations, they had still some happy moments when the great stove roared, warming all their outstretched hands at the same time. That stove moreover, that great stove which formed the essential part of their furniture, had many times puzzled them and made them laugh. There came from it in fact from time to time strange noises which now resembled moaning and now malicious little bursts of laughter. At first they had been afraid; then, seeing that the noises continued without any danger threatening them, they had been amused by them.

The father did indeed sometimes try to find out whence those strange noises came; but it was in vain that he looked everywhere, never did he find anything on the floor or in the ashes.

Now on that particular evening (*Or ce soir-là précisément*) the stove was still more noisy than usual; only there came forth from it nothing but moans, which added to the family's sadness, and, although they were used to them, made them a little uneasy, perhaps because of the state of mind in which they all were.

The next day at (*dès*) dawn, after having embraced Magda, and crossed himself several times, Ianko, anxious and perturbed, took the road to the castle.

He was forthwith shown in to the count, who also (*lui-même*) must have passed a bad night, for he was madly striding [up and down] the great armory, on the threshold of which the peasant stopped.

"Well," said Michel, "do you bring me the consent of Magda?"

"Sir, excuse me," answered Ianko, whose voice stuck (*s'étrangler*) in his throat, "my daughter does not want to get married."

The count stopped short, gave Ianko a most cruel glance (*regarder de son air le plus cruel*), and said coldly: "Very well! before this evening you and your family must have left my house. To-morrow morning I shall make sure that you have all gone; see to it that you are already far [away], if you want to avoid the knout."

The peasant returned to his home with bowed head; he announced in two words the final resolution of the count, and they all, father, mother, Magda, and the children, began the moving, weeping bitterly (*en versant de grosses larmes*). Oh! that would not take very long, and they certainly would finish before evening, and then they would set out with the few provisions which still remained in the chest, and they would go northward, trusting in the mercy of God.

They began by carefully folding up the blankets; they would probably, alas! need them to sleep [in], if they were fortunate enough to find on their road a barn in which they might (use *on* and *vouloir bien*) be permitted to spend the night; then they piled up on a cart their few rickety pieces of furniture, and finally they took their images of the saints (*pieuses images*), before which, morning and evening, they were accustomed to say their prayers together.

Soon there remained nothing more in the house than a few small objects and the stove, the enormous stove which they had kept for the end, because, in order to lift it, their combined efforts were necessary.

It's no little matter to move this great stove from its place (*déplacer*); it has been there so long; it is surely as old as the house itself, almost incrusted in the ground. They pull all together, they strain with their united efforts, and the stove gives way, it moves (*s'écarter*) from the wall. The hardest is done. But they do not think of congratulating themselves (on it), so great is their surprise and their fright. A young girl, wretched, ragged, and pale, comes out from behind the stove, and goes and places herself in the middle of the room.

In their astonishment they all look at her, without saying a word.

She was a tall dark young girl whose tangled hair hung in (*par*) locks over her lean cheeks; her large black eyes lighted up a gloomy countenance, and gave her an expression at the same time resigned and wicked. Her worn dress was torn in many places. Her feet, bare in spite of the cold, and covered with chilblains, appeared beneath her skirt, which was too short. With a rapid movement she had joined her hands over her breast, and was waiting thus in an attitude at the same time mocking and beseeching.

In truth they could not have said whether she was beautiful or ugly, whether they ought to pity her or drive her out. In fact as

they looked at her for some moments they experienced in turn an impression of pity and repugnance, according as resignation or wickedness was apparent (reflexive of *lire*) on her features.

Indeed there is nothing more touching than the spectacle of poverty nobly borne; while jealous and spiteful indigence **inspires** only repulsion.

The first moment of fright passed, the children, crying, took refuge in the corners of the room, while Ianko, advancing toward the young girl, asked her in an ill-assured voice:

"Who are you?"

"I am your poverty," answered the young girl. "Ever since you have been in the world I have lived with you, and since you are moving, I am going to follow you."

All this was said in (*de*) a very natural and very simple tone, so much so that (*si bien que*) the peasant, beginning to understand, felt his fear vanish. The young girl continued: "I am not very troublesome, am I? My place behind the stove, that's all I ask for, but I have attached myself to you. Don't try to drive me away, you would not succeed. I live years and years in the same families, and the fathers almost always bequeath me to their children. Resign yourselves, then (*Prenez-en donc votre parti*), and, since you are going away, take me along willingly."

While she was talking the peasant reflected: "There then is that poverty that has made us suffer so much and labor so hard! It is she who causes (*est cause que*) the little [ones] to cry [with] hunger and cold; it is she who has forced me to work in all [kinds of] weather, and to obey a cruel master; it is she who has made us pass through so much anguish that our life is worn out; it is thanks to her, in short, that to-morrow we shall be without fire or shelter on the highways, to die there perhaps. And it is this wretched [being] who wants to cling to us and never leave us, without (*sans que*) our ever having the hope of ridding ourselves of her some day. No, indeed! it is not right that it should always be the same [people] who should have that bad companion. But how can we rid ourselves of her?"

The eye of the peasant had become (*se faire*) evil in its turn, more evil than that of Poverty when she took on her spiteful expression,

and he thought: "Suppose (*si*) I strangled her? She would no longer make any one suffer."

But Poverty seemed to guess what was passing within him, and she kept watching him with a malicious look. And although thin, she now appeared to have so much life that it seemed to Ianko impossible to do away with her (*la faire disparaître*). She was as supple as an eel, and Ianko thought surely that she would slip between his fingers. It was better, then, to make believe that he resigned himself and to try by stratagem to get rid of that bothersome creature (*gêneuse*, f.). Accordingly (*aussi*) his resolution was soon taken.

"Well," said he to her, "I'll take you along since you wish it; but you know that we are in a great hurry; we have to leave this house before to-morrow. I have heard say that Poverty could sometimes be useful; so just help me to move."

"Gladly," said the young girl, "so much the more because (*que*) I have a reputation for moving which is not undeserved. I can move so quickly that the most vigilant landlords don't notice it."

On saying that, Poverty ran to some small objects which she piled up and prepared to carry to the cart.

"Do you think you are useful to me by doing the work of children?" the peasant then said to her. "Help me rather to take away the heavy pieces of furniture."

"With pleasure" (*Je le veux bien*), answered Poverty, and, leaving the work [she had] begun, she followed Ianko, who had just gone out.

Now there happened to be in a little yard behind the house a heavy block on which the peasant split his wood and ground his grain. Ianko went to it, and, before Poverty had had time to join him, he took his ax, and, with a hard blow, split the block (in) its whole length, then he left the ax in the crack, and, turning around, feigned to be looking in another direction.

Poverty came up almost immediately, and smiling with her malicious smile: "Well," she said, "what work are you going to give me?"

"Help me load this heavy piece of wood; take it at (*de*) one end, I'll take it at the other." The young girl stooped down, but, in spite of all her efforts, she did not succeed in moving it.

"You go about it wrong," cried Ianko, "you'll never succeed

that way; don't you see that there is a crack on purpose (*tout exprès*), so that you can take it more conveniently and lift it?"

The young girl, without suspicion, put her hands into the crack. Then the peasant straightened up suddenly, pulled the ax out of the block, which closed up again, imprisoning the hands of Poverty.

At first she uttered loud (*grand*) cries, threatened and struggled; all was useless, she did not succeed in getting loose.

In the mean time the peasant, who had to hold his sides for laughter (*rire à se tenir les côtes*), called his wife and children to see her who had done them so much harm, and they all soon surrounded the young girl who was now beseeching them.

Ianko joyfully bade her farewell in behalf of the family, then they set out, with very little baggage it is true, but at least relieved of that Poverty who for so long a time had been clinging to them....

## III

The next day as soon as it was light the count came to Ianko's house to make sure that his orders had been executed. Still angry (*sous le coup de sa colère*) he went through the empty (*démeublé*) rooms. In spite of all, he could not forget Magda; and the idea that she had preferred to flee, exposing herself to all privations rather than marry him, humiliated him and irritated him more and more.

Suddenly he heard groans and lamentations which seemed to come from the yard. He went there immediately, and his surprise was very great (*à son comble*), when he found himself in the presence of a beautiful young girl who, her face all covered with tears, was trying in vain to pull her hands out of the block which held them fast (*serrer*).

He approached with a certain suspicion at first, fearing a trap; but the young girl had such an inoffensive and such a beseeching air that he who had never met Poverty, and who did not know that often she is clever at exciting [our] pity and sometimes at deceiving, let himself be fascinated by her strange beauty, and touched by the tears in her eyes.

"Set me free," she said to him.

What touched the count much more was that the young girl seemed

to him marvelously beautiful. The coolness of the night, far from increasing her pallor, had, on the contrary, freshened her complexion, and the morning dew had studded her dishevelled hair with little drops of water brilliant as diamonds. All that, and the supplication of her prayer, and her despairing glance, gave to her face a brightness which it had never had.

"But where will you go if I release you?" asked the count.

"Wherever you may wish, sir," she answered. "I will follow you if you will permit me; I will be your servant, only release me."

This time Michel hesitated no longer. He ran and got a heavy spade in a neighboring field, slipped it into the crack and with a vigorous effort widened it, and held it open long enough for (*le temps que*, with the subj.) Poverty to draw out her hands.

"Thank you very much, sir," she cried with a joyous voice which contrasted strangely with the moans a moment before (*de tout à l'heure*); then she cast her eyes down, and added: "Now I am ready to follow you."

The count, delighted, took her away. He noticed on the way (*pendant la route*) that she clung to him with an irresistible force, but he attributed that to (*mettre cela sur le compte de*) fatigue and emotion, and some moments afterwards he triumphantly installed Poverty in his castle and ordered all his servants to consider her as the mistress of the county.

The very (*Dès*) next day everything changed aspect. The young girl had taken the high hand; everybody obeyed her, and the maddest expenditures were ordered by her. The stables were filled with blooded horses, alterations were made in the parks (*les parcs furent remaniés*), the valets were clothed with sumptuous liveries. Moreover the most dazzling fêtes were given by Michel Sebuski, whom no one seemed able to recognize, but by whose lavishness everybody profited, those especially who hated him most and who formerly would (*vouloir*) not see him.

The count, but lately so miserly, did sometimes attempt to resist (*avoir des velléités de résistance*), but the young girl held him as firmly (*opiniâtrément*) as she had done from the very first hour, and he felt himself incapable of opposing her, not knowing what evil genius urged

him [on], and understanding in spite of all that he was going on (*marcher*) to his ruin. In short, soon he could no longer get along without her who by fair means or foul (*de gré ou de force*) attached herself thus to his life. He accordingly married her, and they had a sumptuous wedding.

That was Michel Sebuski's last effort to maintain the style of life which this woman had made him adopt. Shortly afterwards the creditors presented themselves in crowds, the castle was sold, the domestics dismissed, the beautiful clothes divided, and the count with bowed head, rage in his heart, poorer than the humblest (*dernier*) of his vassals, went off, still escorted by his companion who, more than ever, clung to him, to dwell in a hovel more bare still and more dilapidated than that of the peasant Ianko. Those whom he had invited to dissipate his riches with him refused to come to his aid (*lui venir en aide*), and his former serfs, happy to be rid of him, saw in all this only a just punishment of God.

For his part Ianko, far from Poverty, was prospering. He had been welcomed by a neighboring lord, who soon appreciated his honesty and his ability to work (*courage au travail*). The pieces of gold accumulated in his chest to such an extent that they made Magda the richest, as she was already the most beautiful, heiress of the country. It is even said that a young lord finally (*finir par*) married her in spite of the opposition of his parents. But this last detail is very much contested.

That is what is related in the evening among the Polish peasants.

# REGULAR VERBS

## SIMPLE TENSES

### FIRST CONJUGATION

**Infinitive**

**donner**, *to give*

**Participles**

**donnant**, *giving* **donné**, *given*

**Indicative Mood**

PRESENT

*I am giving, I give, I do give*

| | |
|---|---|
| **je donne** | **nous donnons** |
| **tu donnes** | **vous donnez** |
| **il donne** | **ils donnent** |

IMPERFECT *or* DESCRIPTIVE PAST

*I was giving, I used to give, I gave*

| | |
|---|---|
| **je donnais** | **nous donnions** |
| **tu donnais** | **vous donniez** |
| **il donnait** | **ils donnaient** |

PAST DEFINITE *or* NARRATIVE PAST *or* PRETERIT

*I gave, I did give*

| | |
|---|---|
| **je donnai** | **nous donnâmes** |
| **tu donnas** | **vous donnâtes** |
| **il donna** | **ils donnèrent** |

FUTURE

*I shall give, I shall be giving*

| | |
|---|---|
| **je donnerai** | **nous donnerons** |
| **tu donneras** | **vous donnerez** |
| **il donnera** | **ils donneront** |

**Conditional**

*I should give, I should be giving*

| | |
|---|---|
| **je donnerais** | **nous donnerions** |
| **tu donnerais** | **vous donneriez** |
| **il donnerait** | **ils donneraient** |

IMPERATIVE

*give, etc.*

**donne**
**donnons**
**donnez**

SUBJUNCTIVE

PRESENT

*(that) I (may) give*

| | |
|---|---|
| **je donne** | **nous donnions** |
| **tu donnes** | **vous donniez** |
| **il donne** | **ils donnent** |

IMPERFECT

*(that) I (might) give*

| | |
|---|---|
| **je donnasse** | **nous donnassions** |
| **tu donnasses** | **vous donnassiez** |
| **il donnât** | **ils donnassent** |

## SECOND CONJUGATION

INFINITIVE

**finir**, *to finish*

PARTICIPLES

**finissant**, *finishing* **fini**, *finished*

INDICATIVE MOOD

PRESENT

*I am finishing, I finish, I do finish*

| | |
|---|---|
| **je finis** | **nous finissons** |
| **tu finis** | **vous finissez** |
| **il finit** | **ils finissent** |

IMPERFECT *or* DESCRIPTIVE PAST

*I was finishing, I used to finish, I finished*

| | |
|---|---|
| **je finissais** | **nous finissions** |
| **tu finissais** | **vous finissiez** |
| **il finissait** | **ils finissaient** |

PAST DEFINITE *or* NARRATIVE PAST *or* PRETERIT

*I finished, I did finish*

| | |
|---|---|
| **je finis** | **nous finîmes** |
| **tu finis** | **vous finîtes** |
| **il finit** | **ils finirent** |

FUTURE

*I shall finish, I shall be finishing*

| | |
|---|---|
| **je finirai** | **nous finirons** |
| **tu finiras** | **vous finirez** |
| **il finira** | **ils finiront** |

CONDITIONAL

*I should finish, I should be finishing*

| | |
|---|---|
| **je finirais** | **nous finirions** |
| **tu finirais** | **vous finiriez** |
| **il finirait** | **ils finiraient** |

IMPERATIVE

*finish, etc.*

**finis**
**finissons**
**finissez**

SUBJUNCTIVE

PRESENT

*(that) I (may) finish*

| | |
|---|---|
| **je finisse** | **nous finissions** |
| **tu finisses** | **vous finissiez** |
| **il finisse** | **ils finissent** |

IMPERFECT

*(that) I (might) finish*

| | |
|---|---|
| **je finisse** | **nous finissions** |
| **tu finisses** | **vous finissiez** |
| **il finît** | **ils finissent** |

## THIRD CONJUGATION

INFINITIVE

**rompre,** *to break*

PARTICIPLES

| | |
|---|---|
| **rompant,** *breaking* | **rompu,** *broken* |

INDICATIVE MOOD

PRESENT

*I am breaking, I break, I do break*

| | |
|---|---|
| **je romps** | **nous rompons** |
| **tu romps** | **vous rompez** |
| **il rompt** | **ils rompent** |

IMPERFECT *or* DESCRIPTIVE PAST

*I was breaking, I used to break, I broke*

**je rompais** — **nous rompions**
**tu rompais** — **vous rompiez**
**il rompait** — **ils rompaient**

PAST DEFINITE *or* NARRATIVE PAST *or* PRETERIT

*I broke, I did break*

**je rompis** — **nous rompîmes**
**tu rompis** — **vous rompîtes**
**il rompit** — **ils rompirent**

FUTURE

*I shall break, I shall be breaking*

**je romprai** — **nous romprons**
**tu rompras** — **vous romprez**
**il rompra** — **ils rompront**

CONDITIONAL

*I should break, I should be breaking*

**je romprais** — **nous romprions**
**tu romprais** — **vous rompriez**
**il romprait** — **ils rompraient**

IMPERATIVE

*break, etc.*

**romps**
**rompons**
**rompez**

SUBJUNCTIVE

PRESENT

*(that) I (may) break*

**je rompe** — **nous rompions**
**tu rompes** — **vous rompiez**
**il rompe** — **ils rompent**

IMPERFECT

*(that) I (might) break*

**je rompisse** — **nous rompissions**
**tu rompisses** — **vous rompissiez**
**il rompît** — **ils rompissent**

## COMPOUND TENSES

| INFINITIVE | PARTICIPLE |
|---|---|
| *to have given* | *having given* |
| **avoir donné** | **ayant donné** |

### INDICATIVE

| PAST INDEFINITE | PLUPERFECT |
|---|---|
| *I have given* | *I had given* |
| **j'ai donné** | **j'avais donné** |
| etc. | etc. |

| PAST ANTERIOR | FUTURE ANTERIOR |
|---|---|
| *I had given* | *I shall have given* |
| **j'eus donné** | **j'aurai donné** |
| etc. | etc. |

### CONDITIONAL ANTERIOR

*I should have given*

**j'aurais donné**

etc.

### SUBJUNCTIVE

| PERFECT | PLUPERFECT |
|---|---|
| (*that*) *I* (*may*) *have given* | (*that*) *I* (*might*) *have given* |
| **j'aie donné** | **j'eusse donné** |
| etc. | etc. |

## avoir

### INFINITIVE

**avoir**, *to have*

### PARTICIPLES

**ayant**, *having* **eu**, *had*

### INDICATIVE

PRESENT

*I have, I am having*

| | |
|---|---|
| **j'ai** | **nous avons** |
| **tu as** | **vous avez** |
| **il a** | **ils ont** |

IMPERFECT *or* DESCRIPTIVE PAST

*I had, I was having, I used to have*

| | |
|---|---|
| **j'avais** | **nous avions** |
| **tu avais** | **vous aviez** |
| **il avait** | **ils avaient** |

PAST DEFINITE *or* NARRATIVE PAST *or* PRETERIT

*I had*

| | |
|---|---|
| **j'eus** | **nous eûmes** |
| **tu eus** | **vous eûtes** |
| **il eut** | **ils eurent** |

FUTURE

*I shall have, I shall be having*

| | |
|---|---|
| **j'aurai** | **nous aurons** |
| **tu auras** | **vous aurez** |
| **il aura** | **ils auront** |

CONDITIONAL

*I should have, I should be having*

| | |
|---|---|
| **j'aurais** | **nous aurions** |
| **tu aurais** | **vous auriez** |
| **il aurait** | **ils auraient** |

IMPERATIVE

*have, etc.*

**aie**
**ayons**
**ayez**

SUBJUNCTIVE

PRESENT

| | |
|---|---|
| **j'aie** | **nous ayons** |
| **tu aies** | **vous ayez** |
| **il ait** | **ils aient** |

IMPERFECT

| | |
|---|---|
| **j'eusse** | **nous eussions** |
| **tu eusses** | **vous eussiez** |
| **il eût** | **ils eussent** |

## être

INFINITIVE

**être**, *to be*

PARTICIPLES

| | |
|---|---|
| **étant**, *being* | **été**, *been* |

## Indicative

### PRESENT

*I am, am being*

| | |
|---|---|
| je suis | nous sommes |
| tu es | vous êtes |
| il est | ils sont |

### IMPERFECT *or* DESCRIPTIVE PAST

*I was, I used to be, I was being*

| | |
|---|---|
| j'étais | nous étions |
| tu étais | vous étiez |
| il était | ils étaient |

### PAST DEFINITE *or* NARRATIVE PAST *or* PRETERIT

*I was*

| | |
|---|---|
| je fus | nous fûmes |
| tu fus | vous fûtes |
| il fut | ils furent |

### FUTURE

*I shall be*

| | |
|---|---|
| je serai | nous serons |
| tu seras | vous serez |
| il sera | ils seront |

## Conditional

*I should be*

| | |
|---|---|
| je serais | nous serions |
| tu serais | vous seriez |
| il serait | ils seraient |

## Imperative

*be*, etc.

**sois**

**soyons**

**soyez**

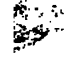
## Subjunctive

### PRESENT

| | |
|---|---|
| je sois | nous soyons |
| tu sois | vous soyez |
| il soit | ils soient |

### IMPERFECT

| | |
|---|---|
| je fusse | nous fussions |
| tu fusses | vous fussiez |
| il fût | ils fussent |



# TABLE OF IRREGULAR VERBS

## absoudre

| INFINITIVE, ETC. | PRES. PART., ETC. | PAST PART., ETC. | PRES. INDIC., ETC. | PRET. INDIC., ETC. |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| **absoudre** | **absolvant** | **absous** | **absouds** | **absolus** |

Like **résoudre** except in past part.

## acquérir

| | | | | |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| **acquérir** | **acquérant** | **acquis** | **acquiers** | **acquis** |
| **acquerrai** | **acquérais** | **avoir acquis** | **acquiers** | **acquisse** |
| **acquerrais** | **acquière** | etc. | | |

*pres. ind.* **acquiers, -quiers, -quiert, -quérons, -quérez, -quièrent**
*pres. subj.* **acquière, -quières, -quière, -quérions, -quériez, -quièrent**

## aller

| | | | | |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| **aller** | **allant** | **allé** | **vais** | **allai** |
| **irai** | **allais** | **être allé** | **va** | **allasse** |
| **irais** | **aille** | etc. | | |

*pres. indic.* **vais, vas, va, allons, allez, vont**
*pres. subj.* **aille, ailles, aille, allions, alliez, aillent**

## assaillir

| | | | | |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| **assaillir** | **assaillant** | **assailli** | **assaille** | **assaillis** |
| **assaillirai** | **assaillais** | **avoir assailli** | **assaille** | **assaillisse** |
| **assaillirais** | **assaille** | etc. | | |

*pres. indic.* **assaille, -sailles, -saille, -saillons, -saillez, -saillent**
Also **tressaillir**

## asseoir

| | | | | |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| **asseoir** | **asseyant** | **assis** | **assieds** | **assis** |
| **assiérai** | **asseyais** | **être assis** | **assieds** | **assisse** |
| **assiérais** | **asseye** | etc. | | |

*pres. indic.* **assieds, assieds, assied, asseyons, asseyez, asseyent**

## boire

| Infinitive, etc. | Pres. Part. etc. | Past Part., etc. | Pres. Indic., etc. | Pret. Indic., etc. |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| **boire** | **buvant** | **bu** | **bois** | **bus** |
| **boirai** | **buvais** | **avoir bu** | **bois** | **busse** |
| **boirais** | **boive** | etc. | | |

*pres. indic.* **bois, bois, boit, buvons, buvez, boivent**
*pres. subj.* **boive, boives, boive, buvions, buviez, boivent**

## bouillir

| | | | | |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| **bouillir** | **bouillant** | **bouilli** | **bous** | **bouillis** |
| **bouillirai** | **bouillais** | **avoir bouilli** | **bous** | **bouillisse** |
| **bouillirais** | **bouille** | etc. | | |

*pres. indic.* **bous, bous, bout, bouillons, bouillez, bouillent**

## conclure

| | | | | |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| **conclure** | **concluant** | **conclu** | **conclus** | **conclus** |
| **conclurai** | **concluais** | **avoir conclu** | **conclus** | **conclusse** |
| **conclurais** | **conclue** | etc. | | |

*pres. indic.* **conclus, -clus, -clut, -cluons, -cluez, -cluent**

## conduire

| | | | | |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| **conduire** | **conduisant** | **conduit** | **conduis** | **conduisis** |
| **conduirai** | **conduisais** | **avoir conduit** | **conduis** | **conduisisse** |
| **conduirais** | **conduise** | etc. | | |

*pres. indic.* **conduis, -duis, -duit, -duisons, -duisez, -duisent**

Also **construire** **instruire**
**détruire** **introduire**
**induire** **produire**
**réduire**

## confire

| | | | | |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| **confire** | **confisant** | **confit** | **confis** | **confis** |

Like **suffire,** except in past part.

## connaître

| | | | | |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| **connaître** | **connaissant** | **connu** | **connais** | **connus** |
| **connaîtrai** | **connaissais** | **avoir connu** | **connais** | **connusse** |
| **…ais** | **connaisse** | etc. | | |

*…indic.* **connais, -nais, -naît, -naissons, -naissez, -naissent**
…d ***re*connaître,** also **paître**

### coudre

| INFINITIVE, ETC. | PRES. PART., ETC. | PAST PART., ETC. | PRES. INDIC., ETC. | PRET. INDIC., ETC. |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| coudre | cousant | cousu | couds | cousis |
| coudrai | cousais | avoir cousu | couds | cousisse |
| coudrais | couse | etc. | | |

*pres. indic.* couds, couds, coud, cousons, cousez, cousent

Also its compound *dé*coudre

### courir

| | | | | |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| courir | courant | couru | cours | courus |
| courrai | courais | avoir couru | cours | courusse |
| courrais | coure | etc. | | |

*pres. indic.* cours, cours, court, courons, courez, courent

Also its compounds *ac*cour[illegible]
*par*courir
*se*courir

### couvrir

| | | | | |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| couvrir | couvrant | couvert | couvre | couvris |
| couvrirai | couvrais | avoir couvert | couvre | couvri[illegible] |
| couvrirais | couvre | etc. | | |

*pres. indic.* couvre, couvres, couvre, couvrons, couvrez, [illegible]

### craindre

| | | | | |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| craindre | craignant | craint | crains | craignis |
| craindrai | craignais | avoir craint | crains | craignisse |
| craindrais | craigne | etc. | | |

*pres. indic.* crains, crains, craint, craignons, craignez, craignent

Also contraindre
plaindre

### croire

| | | | | |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| croire | croyant | cru | crois | crus |
| croirai | croyais | avoir cru | crois | crusse |
| croirais | croie | etc. | | |

*pres. indic.* crois, crois, croit, croyons, croyez, croient

### croître

| | | | | |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| croître | croissant | crû | croîs | crûs |
| croîtrai | croissais | avoir crû | croîs | crûsse |
| croîtrais | croisse | etc. | | |

*pres. indic.* croîs, croîs, croît, croissons, croissez, croissent

## cueillir

| Infinitive, etc. | Pres. Part., etc. | Past Part., etc. | Pres. Indic. etc. | Pret. Indic. etc. |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| **cueillir** | **cueillant** | **cueilli** | **cueille** | **cueillis** |
| **cueillerai** | **cueillais** | **avoir cueilli** | **cueille** | **cueillisse** |
| **cueillerais** | **cueille** | etc. | | |

*pres. indic.* **cueille, cueilles, cueille, cueillons, cueillez, cueillent**

Also its compound *re***cueillir**

## déchoir

| | | | | |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| **déchoir** | **[déchoyant]** | **déchu** | **déchois** | **déchus** |
| **décherrai** | **déchoyais** | **avoir déchu** | **déchois** | **déchusse** |
| **décherrais** | **déchoie** | etc. | | |

*pres. indic.* **déchois, -chois, -choit, -choyons, -choyez, -choient**

## devoir

| | | | | |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| **devoir** | **devant** | **dû** | **dois** | **dus** |
| **devrai** | **devais** | **avoir dû** | **dois** | **dusse** |
| **devrais** | **doive** | etc. | | |

*pres. indic.* **dois, dois, doit, devons, devez, doivent**

*pres. subj.* **doive, doives, doive, devions, deviez, doivent**

## dire

| | | | | |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| **dire** | **disant** | **dit** | **dis** | **dis** |
| **dirai** | **disais** | **avoir dit** | **dis** | **disse** |
| **dirais** | **dise** | etc. | | |

*pres. indic.* **dis, dis, dit, disons, dites, disent**

Also its compounds *contre***dire** *re***dire**
*inter***dire**

## dormir

| | | | | |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| **dormir** | **dormant** | **dormi** | **dors** | **dormis** |
| **dormirai** | **dormais** | **avoir dormi** | **dors** | **dormisse** |
| **dormirais** | **dorme** | etc. | | |

*pres. indic.* **dors, dors, dort, dormons, dormez, dorment**

Also its compound *en***dormir**

## écrire

| | | | | |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| **écrire** | **écrivant** | **écrit** | **écris** | **écrivis** |
| **écrirai** | **écrivais** | **avoir écrit** | **écris** | **écrivisse** |
| **écrirais** | **écrive** | etc. | | |

*pres. indic.* **écris, écris, écrit, écrivons, écrivez, écrivent**

### envoyer

| INFINITIVE ETC. | PRES. PART., ETC. | PAST PART., ETC. | PRES. INDIC., ETC. | PRET. INDIC., ETC. |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| envoyer | envoyant | envoyé | envoie | envoyai |
| enverrai | envoyais | avoir envoyé | envoie | envoyasse |
| enverrais | envoie | etc. | | |

*pres. indic.* envoie, envoies, envoie, envoyons, envoyez, envoient

### faillir

| | | | | |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| faillir | [faillant] | failli | [faux] | [faillis] |
| faillirai | [faillais] | avoir failli | | |
| faillirais | [faille] | etc. | | |

### faire

| | | | | |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| faire | faisant | fait | fais | fis |
| ferai | faisais | avoir fait | fais | fisse |
| ferais | fasse | etc. | | |

*pres. indic.* fais, fais, fait, faisons, faites, font

Also its compounds *dé*faire *re*faire *satis*faire

### falloir

| | | | | |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| falloir | [fallant] | fallu | faut | fallut |
| faudra | fallait | avoir fallu | | fallût |
| faudrait | faille | etc. | | |

Used only impersonally.

### fuir

| | | | | |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| fuir | fuyant | fui | fuis | fuis |
| fuirai | fuyais | avoir fui | fuis | fuisse |
| fuirais | fuie | etc. | | |

*pres. indic.* fuis, fuis, fuit, fuyons, fuyez, fuient

Also its compound *en*fuir

### gésir

| | | | | |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| gésir | gisant | —— | gis | —— |
| | gisais | | | |

*pres. indic.* ——, ——, gît, gisons, gisez, gisent

### joindre

| Infinitive, etc. | Pres. Part., etc. | Past Part., etc. | Pres. Indic., etc. | Pret. Indic., etc. |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| joindre | joignant | joint | joins | joignis |
| joindrai | joignais | avoir joint | joins | joignisse |
| joindrais | joigne | etc. | | |

*pres. indic.* joins, joins, joint, joignons, joignez, joignent

Also its compound *re*joindre

### lire

| | | | | |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| lire | lisant | lu | lis | lus |
| lirai | lisais | avoir lu | lis | lusse |
| lirais | lise | etc. | | |

*pres. indic.* lis, lis, lit, lisons, lisez, lisent

Also its compound *re*lire

### maudire

| | | | | |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| maudire | maudissant | maudit | maudis | maudis |
| maudirai | maudissais | avoir maudit | maudis | maudisse |
| maudirais | maudisse | etc. | | |

*pres. indic.* maudis, -dis, -dit, -dissons, -dissez, -dissent

### mettre

| | | | | |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| mettre | mettant | mis | mets | mis |
| mettrai | mettais | avoir mis | mets | misse |
| mettrais | mette | etc. | | |

*pres. indic.* mets, mets, met, mettons, mettez, mettent

Also its compounds *ad*mettre, *pro*mettre, *compro*mettre, *re*mettre, *per*mettre, *sou*mettre, *trans*mettre

### moudre

| | | | | |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| moudre | moulant | moulu | mouds | moulus |
| moudrai | moulais | avoir moulu | mouds | moulusse |
| moudrais | moule | etc. | | |

*pres. indic.* mouds, mouds, moud, moulons, moulez, moulent

### mourir

| INFINITIVE, ETC. | PRES. PART., ETC. | PAST PART., ETC. | PRES. INDIC., ETC. | PRET. INDIC., ETC. |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| mourir | mourant | mort | meurs | mourus |
| mourrai | mourais | être mort | meurs | mourusse |
| mourrais | meure | etc. | | |

*pres. indic.* meurs, meurs, meurt, mourons, mourez, meurent
*pres. subj.* meure, meures, meure, mourions, mouriez, meurent

### mouvoir

| | | | | |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| mouvoir | mouvant | mû | meus | mus |
| mouvrai | mouvais | avoir mû | meus | musse |
| mouvrais | meuve | etc. | | |

*pres. indic.* meus, meus, meut, mouvons, mouvez, meuvent
*pres. subj.* meuve, meuves, meuve, mouvions, mouviez, meuvent
Also its compound *é*mouvoir

### naître

| | | | | |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| naître | naissant | né | nais | naquis |
| naîtrai | naissais | être né | nais | naquisse |
| naîtrais | naisse | etc. | | |

*pres. indic.* nais, nais, naît, naissons, naissez, naissent

### nuire

| | | | | |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| nuire | nuisant | nui | nuis | nuisis |
| nuirai | nuisais | avoir nui | nuis | nuisisse |
| nuirais | nuise | etc. | | |

*pres. indic.* nuis, nuis, nuit, nuisons, nuisez, nuisent

### ouvrir

| | | | | |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| ouvrir | ouvrant | ouvert | ouvre | ouvris |
| ouvrirai | ouvrais | avoir ouvert | ouvre | ouvrisse |
| ouvrirais | ouvre | etc. | | |

Also its compounds *entr'*ouvrir rouvrir
Also offrir
and couvrir
with its compounds *dé*couvrir *re*couvrir

## paraître

| INFINITIVE, ETC. | PRES. PART. ETC. | PAST PART. ETC. | PRES. INDIC., ETC. | PRET. INDIC., ETC. |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| **paraître** | **paraissant** | **paru** | **parais** | **parus** |
| **paraîtrai** | **paraissais** | **avoir paru** | **parais** | **parusse** |
| **paraîtrais** | **paraisse** | etc. | | |

*pres. indic.* **parais, -rais, -raît, -raissons, -raissez, -raissent**

Also its compounds *ap***paraître** *dis***paraître** *re***paraître**

## partir

| | | | | |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| **partir** | **partant** | **parti** | **pars** | **partis** |
| **partirai** | **partais** | **être parti** | **pars** | **partisse** |
| **partirais** | **parte** | etc. | | |

Also its compounds *dé***partir** *re* **partir**
Also **mentir** and *dé***mentir**
**sentir** and *res***sentir**
**sortir**

## peindre

| | | | | |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| **peindre** | **peignant** | **peint** | **peins** | **peignis** |
| **peindrai** | **peignais** | **avoir peint** | **peins** | **peignisse** |
| **peindrais** | **peigne** | etc. | | |

*pres. indic.* **peins, peins, peint, peignons, peignez, peignent**

Also **atteindre** **éteindre** **étreindre**

## plaire

| | | | | |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| **plaire** | **plaisant** | **plu** | **plais** | **plus** |

Like **taire,** except 3d pers. sing. of *pres. indic.* **il plaît**

## pleuvoir

| | | | | |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| **pleuvoir** | **pleuvant** | **plu** | **pleut** | **plut** |
| **pleuvra** | **pleuvait** | **avoir plu** | —— | [illegible] |
| **pleuvrait** | **pleuve** | etc. | | |

Impersonal only.

## pourvoir

| INFINITIVE, ETC. | PRES. PART., ETC. | PAST PART., ETC. | PRES. INDIC., ETC. | PRET. INDIC., ETC. |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| **pourvoir** | **pourvoyant** | **pourvu** | **pourvois** | **pourvus** |
| **pourvoirai** | **pourvoyais** | **avoir pourvu** | **pourvois** | **pourvusse** |
| **pourvoirais** | **pourvoie** | etc. | | |

*pres. indic.* and *subj.* like **voir**

## pouvoir

| | | | | |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| **pouvoir** | **pouvant** | **pu** | **peux** or **puis** | **pus** |
| **pourrai** | **pouvais** | **avoir pu** | ——— | **pusse** |
| **pourrais** | **puisse** | etc. | | |

*pres. indic.* **peux** or **puis, peux, peut, pouvons, pouvez, peuvent**

## prendre

| | | | | |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| **prendre** | **prenant** | **pris** | **prends** | **pris** |
| **prendrai** | **prenais** | **avoir pris** | **prends** | **prisse** |
| **prendrais** | **prenne** | etc. | | |

*pres. indic.* **prends, prends, prend, prenons, prenez, prennent**
*pres. subj.* **prenne, prennes, prenne, prenions, preniez, prennent**

Also its compounds ***ap*prendre** ***dé*prendre**
***désap*prendre** ***entre*prendre**
***com*prendre** ***re*prendre**
***sur*prendre**

## prévoir

| | | | | |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| **prévoir** | **prévoyant** | **prévu** | **prévois** | **prévis** |

Like **pourvoir** except in preterit.

## recevoir

| | | | | |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| **recevoir** | **recevant** | **reçu** | **reçois** | **reçus** |
| **recevrai** | **recevais** | **avoir reçu** | **reçois** | **reçusse** |
| **recevrais** | **reçoive** | etc. | | |

*indic.* **reçois, reçois, reçoit, recevons, recevez, reçoivent**
*subj.* **reçoive, reçoives, reçoive, recevions, receviez, reçoivent**

Also **percevoir** and ***a*percevoir**
**concevoir**

## résoudre

| INFINITIVE, ETC. | PRES. PART., ETC. | PAST PART., ETC. | PRES. INDIC., ETC. | PRET. INDIC., ETC. |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| **résoudre** | **résolvant** | **résolu** | **résouds** | **résolus** |
| **résoudrai** | **résolvais** | **avoir résolu** | **résouds** | **résolusse** |
| **résoudrais** | **résolve** | etc. | | |

*pres. indic.* **résouds, -souds, -soud, -solvons, -solvez, -solvent**

## rire

| | | | | |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| **rire** | **riant** | **ri** | **ris** | **ris** |
| **rirai** | **riais** | **avoir ri** | **ris** | **risse** |
| **rirais** | **rie** | etc. | | |

*pres. indic.* **ris, ris, rit, rions, riez, rient**

Also its compound ***sou*rire**

## savoir

| | | | | |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| **savoir** | **sachant** | **su** | **sais** | **sus** |
| **saurai** | **savais** | **avoir su** | **sache** | **susse** |
| **saurais** | **sache** | etc. | | |

*pres. indic.* **sais, sais, sait, savons, savez, savent**

*imperative* **sache, sachons, sachez**

## servir

| | | | | |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| **servir** | **servant** | **servi** | **sers** | **servis** |
| **servirai** | **servais** | **avoir servi** | **sers** | **servisse** |
| **servirais** | **serve** | etc. | | |

*pres. indic.* **sers, sers, sert, servons, servez, servent**

## suffire

| | | | | |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| **suffire** | **suffisant** | **suffi** | **suffis** | **suffis** |
| **suffirai** | **suffisais** | **avoir suffi** | **suffis** | **suffisse** |
| **suffirais** | **suffise** | etc. | | |

*pres. indic.* **suffis, suffis, suffit, suffisons, suffisez, suffisent**

## suivre

| | | | | |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| **suivre** | **suivant** | **suivi** | **suis** | **suivis** |
| **suivrai** | **suivais** | **avoir suivi** | **suis** | **suivisse** |
| **suivrais** | **suive** | etc. | | |

*pres. indic.* **suis, suis, suit, suivons, suivez, suivent**

Also its compound ***pour*suivre**

### taire

| INFINITIVE, ETC. | PRES. PART., ETC. | PAST PART. ETC. | PRES. INDIC., ETC. | PRET. INDIC., ETC. |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| **taire** | **taisant** | **tu** | **tais** | **tus** |
| **tairai** | **taisais** | **avoir tu** | **tais** | **tusse** |
| **tairais** | **taise** | etc. | | |

*pres. indic.* **tais, tais, tait, taisons, taisez, taisent**

### vaincre

| | | | | |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| **vaincre** | **vainquant** | **vaincu** | **vaincs** | **vainquis** |
| **vaincrai** | **vainquais** | **avoir vaincu** | **vaincs** | **vainquisse** |
| **vaincrais** | **vainque** | etc. | | |

*pres. indic.* **vaincs, vaincs, vainc, vainquons, vainquez, vainquent**

### valoir

| | | | | |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| **valoir** | **valant** | **valu** | **vaux** | **valus** |
| **vaudrai** | **valais** | **avoir valu** | **vaux** | **valusse** |
| **vaudrais** | **vaille** | etc. | | |

*pres. indic.* **vaux, vaux, vaut, valons, valez, valent**
*pres. subj.* **vaille, vailles, vaille, valions, valiez, vaillent**

And its compound *équi*valoir

### venir

| | | | | |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| **venir** | **venant** | **venu** | **viens** | **vins** |
| **viendrai** | **venais** | **être venu** | **viens** | **vinsse** |
| **viendrais** | **vienne** | etc. | | |

*pres. indic.* **viens, viens, vient, venons, venez, viennent**
*pres. subj.* **vienne, viennes, vienne, venions, veniez, viennent**

Also its compounds *con*venir, *dé*venir, *rede*venir, *par*venir, *pré*venir, *pro*venir, *re*venir, *sou*venir

Also **tenir** and its compounds *appar*tenir, *con*tenir, *main*tenir, *ob*tenir, *re*tenir, *sou*tenir

### vêtir

| | | | | |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| **vêtir** | **vêtant** | **vêtu** | **vêts** | **vêtis** |
| **vêtirai** | **vêtais** | **avoir vêtu** | **vêts** | **vêtisse** |
| **vêtirais** | **vête** | etc. | | |

*pres. indic.* **vêts, vêts, vêt, vêtons, vêtez, vêtent**

Also its compound *re*vêtir

## vivre

| Infinitive, etc. | Pres. Part., etc. | Past Part., etc. | Pres. Indic., etc. | Pret. Indic., etc. |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| **vivre** | **vivant** | **vécu** | **vis** | **vécus** |
| **vivrai** | **vivais** | **avoir vécu** | **vis** | **vécusse** |
| **vivrais** | **vive** | etc. | | |

*pres. indic.* **vis, vis, vit, vivons, vivez, vivent**

## voir

| | | | | |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| **voir** | **voyant** | **vu** | **vois** | **vis** |
| **verrai** | **voyais** | **avoir vu** | **vois** | **visse** |
| **verrais** | **voie** | etc. | | |

*pres. indic.* **vois, vois, voit, voyons, voyez, voient**

*pres. subj.* **voie, voies, voie, voyions, voyiez, voient**

Also its compounds *entre***voir** *pré***voir**

*re***voir**

## vouloir

| | | | | |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| **vouloir** | **voulant** | **voulu** | **veux** | **voulus** |
| **voudrai** | **voulais** | **avoir voulu** | —— | **voulusse** |
| **voudrais** | **veuille** | etc. | | |

*pres. indic.* **veux, veux, veut, voulons, voulez, veulent**

*pres. subj.* **veuille, veuilles, veuille, voulions, vouliez, veuillent**



# VOCABULARY

# VOCABULARY

**Proper nouns are given only when the French and English forms are different, or when it is necessary to show the gender.**

**An inverted comma (') before initial *h* shows it to be aspirate.**

## A

**a, an,** un, *m.*, une, *f.*
**aback, take —,** interdire.
**abide, — by** (*keep to*), s'en tenir à.
**ability,** capacité, *f.*
**abject,** abject; profond.
**able, be —,** pouvoir.
**abolish,** abolir.
**about,** de; sur; à; à l'égard de; environ; **— it,** en; y; **— him,** à son sujet; **go (set) —,** se prendre à, se mettre à; **know —,** être au courant de; **inform —,** mettre au courant de; **be —,** s'agir de; être sur le point de; **what is it —?,** de quoi s'agit-il?
**above,** au-dessus de; **— reproach,** sans reproche.
**abruptly,** brusquement.
**absence,** absence, *f.*
**absent,** absent.
**absent-minded,** distrait.
**absolute,** absolu.
**absolutely,** absolument.
**absorb,** absorber.
**academy,** académie, *f.*
**accent,** accent, *m.*
**accept,** accepter.
**accident,** accident, *m.*
**accommodation, the —s are good there,** on y est bien.
**accompany,** accompagner.
**accordance, in — with,** suivant, selon.
**according, — to (as),** suivant, selon; d'après; conformément à.
**accordingly,** par conséquent; donc.
**accost,** aborder, s'adresser à.
**account, on — of,** à cause de.
**accumulate,** accumuler, s'accumuler.
**accuse,** accuser.
**accustom,** accoutumer (à), habituer (à), faire (à).
**accustomed, to become —,** s'accoutumer (à), se faire (à).
**acquaintance,** connaissance, *f.*
**acquainted, become — with,** faire la connaissance de; **be — with,** connaître.
**acquire,** acquérir, prendre.
**act,** agir, se conduire.
**actor,** acteur, *m.*
**actress,** actrice, *f.*
**add,** ajouter.
**address,** *v.*, adresser.
**address,** *n.*, adresse, *f.*
**adjective,** adjective, *m.*
**admiration,** admiration, *f.*
**admire,** admirer.
**admission,** entrée, *f.*
**admit,** admettre; avouer.
**adolescence,** adolescence, *f.*
**adopt,** adopter.
**advance,** avancer; s'avancer.
**advantage,** avantage, *m.*
**adventure,** aventure, *f.*
**advice,** avis, *m.*, conseil, *m.*; **piece of —,** conseil, *m.*
**advise,** conseiller.
**affair,** affaire, *f.*; chose, *f.*
**affect,** émouvoir.
**affection,** affection, *f.*
**afraid, be — (of),** avoir peur (de), craindre; **be much —,** avoir grand' peur; **— of,** effrayé de.
**Africa,** Afrique, *f.*
**after,** après; après que; **go —,** aller chercher.
**afternoon,** après-midi, *m. and f.*

**afterwards,** après.
**again,** encore, de nouveau, une autre fois; **see —,** revoir.
**against,** contre; **have a grudge —,** en vouloir à.
**age,** âge, *m.*
**aged, the —,** les vieillards.
**ago,** il y a; **a little while —,** tout à l'heure.
**agree,** être d'accord, s'accorder.
**agreeable,** agréable.
**agriculture,** agriculture, *f.*
**ah,** ah!
**aid,** *v.*, aider.
**aid,** *n.*, secours, *m.*
**air,** air, *m.*
**air-ship,** aérostat, *m.*
**alarm,** alarmer; **don't be —ed,** ne vous alarmez pas.
**alas,** hélas.
**Alexander,** Alexandre, *m.*
**alike,** semblable, pareil; **look —,** avoir le même air.
**alive,** en vie, vivant.
**all,** tout (toute, tous, toutes); **— that (which),** tout ce qui; **for — that,** tout de même; ne pas laisser de; **not at —,** pas du tout; **nothing at —,** rien du tout.
**allow,** laisser.
**almost,** presque.
**alms,** aumône, *f.*
**alone,** seul.
**along,** par; le long de; **— with,** avec; **take —,** emmener; **get — without,** se passer de.
**aloud,** 'haut; bruyamment.
**already,** déjà.
**also,** aussi.
**although,** quoique, bien que.
**altogether,** entièrement, tout à fait.
**always,** toujours.
**amass,** amasser.
**amazement,** étonnement, *m.*, stupeur, *f.*
**ambiguous,** équivoque.
**America,** Amérique, *f.*
**American,** américain.
**amiable,** aimable.
**among,** parmi; entre; chez.
**amount,** montant, *m.*, somme, *f.*
**amuse,** amuser.
**ancestors,** ancêtres, *m. pl.*, aïeux, *m. pl.*
**and,** et; **— so,** aussi; **go — see,** aller voir.
***angelus,*** *angélus, m.*
**angrily,** rageusement.
**angry,** fâché; **be — (at), get — (with),** se fâcher (contre), se mettre en colère (contre).
**anguish,** angoisse, *f.*
**animal,** animal, *m.*; bête, *f.*
**announce,** annoncer.
**annoy,** incommoder.
**another,** un autre; encore un; **not —,** ne . . . pas (point) d'autre.
**answer,** *v.*, répondre.
**answer,** *n.*, réponse, *f.*
**anxious,** inquiet; **be — to,** tenir à.
**any,** de + *def. art.*; de; en; aucun; quelque; tout; quelconque; **I haven't —,** je n'en ai pas; **not — where,** nulle part; **— more,** encore; *with neg.*, plus; (pas) davantage.
**anybody,** quelqu'un; **not —,** ne . . . personne.
**any one,** quelqu'un; *neg.*, personne; **— in the world,** qui que ce soit.
**anything,** quelque chose, *m.*, tout; **not —,** ne . . . rien; **— will do,** n'importe quoi fera l'affaire.
**apoplexy,** apoplexie, *f.*
**appear,** paraître; apparaître; se présenter; comparaître; **— to be,** avoir l'air.
**appearance,** apparence, *f.*
**appetite,** appétit, *m.*
**applaud,** applaudir.
**apple,** pomme, *f.*
**apply,** appliquer.
**appreciate,** apprécier.
**approach,** *v.*, approcher; s'approcher (de).
**approach,** *n.*, approche, *f.*
**approximately,** à peu près.
**April,** avril, *m.*
**Arabian,** arabe.
**archbishop,** archevêque, *m.*
**archer,** archer, *m.*
**arise,** se lever.
**arm,** bras, *m.*
**armchair,** fauteuil, *m.*
**armory,** salle d'armes, *f.*
**around,** autour de; à la ronde; **turn —,** retourner; se retourner.
**arrange,** arranger; **— it so that,** faire en sorte que.
**arrangement,** arrangement, *m.*
**arrest,** arrêter.
**arrive,** arriver, venir.
**arsenal,** arsenal, *m.*
**art,** art, *m.*; **— critic,** critique (*m.*) d'art.

**articulate,** articuler.
**artisan,** artisan, *m.*
**artist,** artiste, *m. and f.*
**artless,** naïf (naïve).
**as,** comme; aussi; si; en; — . . . —, aussi . . . que; — **long** —, aussi longtemps que; — **high** —, jusqu'à; — **much** —, autant que; — **soon** —, dès que, aussitôt que; — **if to,** comme pour, pour; — **for,** pour, quant à; — **yet,** encore.
**ash,** cendre, *f.*, cendres, *f. pl.*
**ashamed,** 'honteux; **be — of,** avoir 'honte de.
**Asia,** Asie, *f.*
**ask,** demander; prier (de); — **for,** demander.
**asleep,** endormi; **be —,** être endormi, dormir.
**aspect,** aspect, *m.*
**aspire,** aspirer.
**assassin,** assassin, *m.*
**assassinate,** assassiner.
**assistance,** assistance, *f.*, aide, *f.*
**associate with,** fréquenter.
**assurance,** aplomb, *m.*
**assure,** assurer.
**astonish,** étonner; **be —ed,** s'étonner.
**astonishing,** étonnant.
**astonishment,** saisissement, *m.*
**astrologer,** astrologue, *m.*
**at,** à; chez; de; en; dans; par; sur; — **all,** du tout; — **home,** à la maison, chez moi, *etc.*; — **once,** tout de suite; **be — stake,** s'agir de; y aller de.
**attach,** *v.*, attacher (à); s'attacher (à).
**attack,** *n.*, attaque, *f.*
**attention,** attention, *f.*; **pay —,** faire attention (à).
**attentively,** attentivement.
**attitude,** attitude, *f.*
**auburn,** châtain.
**Austria,** Autriche, *f.*
**author,** auteur, *m.*
**avarice,** avarice, *f.*
**avenge,** venger.
**avoid,** éviter.
**awake,** *v. a.*, éveiller, réveiller; *v. n.*, s'éveiller, se réveiller.
**awake,** *adj.*, éveillé.
**aware, be — of,** savoir; connaître.
**away, go —,** s'en aller; se retirer; **get,** — soustraire; **lead —,** emmener; **take,** — ôter, enlever; emmener.
**ax,** 'hache, *f.*

B

**baby,** bébé, *m.*
**back,** dos, *m.*; **be —,** être de retour; **bring —,** ramener; rapporter; **call —,** rappeler; **come —,** revenir; **get —,** revenir, rentrer; **turn —,** retourner; **on the (your) way —,** au retour.
**bad,** mal; mauvais; vilain; méchant; (*of money*) faux.
**badly,** mal.
**baggage,** bagage, *m.*
**ball,** bal, *m.*
**banquet,** festin, *m.*
**bare,** nu.
**barefoot,** nu-pieds, les pieds nus.
**barn,** grange, *f.*
**barrel,** baril, *m.*
**battle,** battaille, *f.*
**bayonet,** baïonnette, *f.*
**be,** être; y avoir; se trouver; (*of age*) avoir; (*of health*) aller, se porter; (*of weather*) faire; — **afraid,** avoir peur, craindre; — **at stake,** y aller de; s'agir de; — **right,** avoir raison; **there is (are),** il y a; **that (there) is (are),** voilà, voici; **that may —,** cela se peut; **I am to . . . ,** je dois . . .
**bear,** supporter.
**beard,** barbe, *f.*
**beast,** bête, *f.*; animal, *m.*
**beat,** battre.
**beautiful,** beau, bel, *m.*, belle, *f.*
**beauty,** beauté, *f.*
**because,** parce que.
**become,** devenir; **what has — of him?** qu'est-il devenu?
**bed,** lit, *m.*; **go to —,** (aller) se coucher.
**bedroom,** chambre (*f.*) à coucher.
**beer,** bière, *f.*
**before,** *prep.*, (*of place*) devant; (*of time*) avant; avant de (*with inf.*); avant que (*with subj.*).
**before,** *adv.*, (*of time*) avant, auparavant; (*of place*) devant.
**beg,** demander; prier; demander l'aumône.
**beggar,** mendiant, *m.*; gueux, *m.*
**begging,** mendicité, *f.*
**begin,** commencer; se mettre à.
**behalf, in — of,** en faveur de, pour; de la part de.
**behavior,** conduite, *f.*
**behead,** décapiter.
**behind,** derrière.

**believe,** croire; **make —,** faire semblant.
**belong,** appartenir (à), être (à).
**below,** derrière.
**bend,** incliner; courber.
**beneath,** sous.
**bent, — over,** courbé.
**bequeath,** léguer.
**beseech,** supplier; implorer.
**beseeching,** suppliant.
**besides,** d'ailleurs, de plus; aussi bien.
**best,** *adj.*, meilleur.
**best,** *adv.*, le mieux; **do one's —,** faire de son mieux; **as — I could,** de mon mieux.
**betray,** trahir.
**better,** *adj.*, meilleur.
**better,** *adv.*, mieux; **be —,** valoir mieux; **be —** (*of health*), se porter mieux; **I had —,** je ferais mieux (bien) de.
**between,** entre.
**bid, — farewell,** faire ses adieux à, dire adieu à.
**big,** grand.
**bird,** oiseau, *m.*
**birthday,** jour (*m.*) de naissance; fête, *f.*
**bit,** mors, *m.*
**bite,** mordre.
**black,** noir.
**blame** ('**for**', de), blâmer; s'en prendre à.
**blanket,** couverture, *f.*
**blindness,** aveuglement, *m.*
**block,** (*of carriages*) embarras, *m.*; (*for chopping, etc.*) billot, *m.*
**blond,** blond.
**blooded** (**— horse**), de sang.
**blow,** coup, *m.*; **come to —s,** en venir aux mains.
**blue,** bleu.
**board,** planche, *f.*
**boat,** bateau, *m.*, barque, *f.*
**body,** corps, *m.*; **— guard,** garde (*f.*) du corps.
**bold,** 'hardi.
**book,** livre, *m.*
**bore,** ennuyer.
**born, be —,** naître; **he was —,** il est né.
**borrow,** emprunter.
**borrower,** emprunteur, *m.*
**both,** tous (les) deux, l'un et l'autre, deux, les deux; **— . . . and,** et . . . et.
*bother, importuner.*
**bothersome,** importun.
**bottle,** bouteille, *f.*
**bottom,** bas, *m.*
**boulevard,** boulevard, *m.*
**bouquet,** bouquet, *m.*
**bow,** courber; baisser; **with —ed head,** la tête basse.
**boy,** garçon, *m.*
**brain,** cerveau, *m.*
**brave,** *v.*, braver.
**brave,** *adj.*, brave.
**bread,** pain, *m.*
**break,** casser.
**breakfast,** déjeuner, *m.*
**breast,** poitrine, *f.*
**breath, out of —,** essoufflé.
**breviary,** bréviaire, *m.*
**brightness,** éclat, *m.*
**brilliant,** brillant.
**bring,** apporter; amener; **— back,** ramener; rapporter; **— up,** élever.
**brother,** frère, *m.*
**brother-in-law,** beau-frère, *m.*
**bruskly,** brusquement.
**brutal,** brutal.
**brute,** brute, *f.*
**build,** construire, bâtir; **— up,** relever.
**built,** construit, bâti, fait.
**burgher,** bourgeois, *m.*
**burlesque,** burlesque.
**burn,** brûler.
**burst, — out laughing,** éclater de rire.
**burst,** éclat, *m.*
**business,** métier, *m.*, affaire, *f.*, affaires, *f. pl.*
**busy,** occupé, affairé; **be —,** s'occuper.
**but,** mais; (**nothing**) **but,** ne . . . que.
**buy,** acheter.
**by,** par; avec; de; à; en; (*of dimensions*) sur; **— the way,** à propos.

C

**cab,** voiture, *f.*
**cabman,** cocher, *m.*, (de fiacre).
**California,** Californie, *f.*
**call,** appeler; faire venir; faire (rendre) visite (à); **be —ed,** s'appeler; **— at (upon),** passer chez; **— back,** rappeler; **go —ing,** aller faire des visites.
**Calvinism,** calvinisme, *m.*
**Calvinist,** calviniste, *m.*
**can,** pouvoir.
**cannon,** canon, *m.*
**capable,** capable.

**capital,** capitale, *f.*
**car,** wagon, *m.*
**card,** carte, *f.*
**cardinal,** cardinal, *m.*
**care,** soin, *m.*; **take — of oneself,** se soigner; **take good — not to,** n'avoir garde de.
**careful, be —,** prendre garde (à, de).
**carefully,** avec soin; soigneusement; bien.
**careless,** négligent.
**carriage,** voiture, *f.*; carrosse, *m.*
**carry,** porter; **— off,** emporter.
**cart,** charrette, *f.*
**case,** cas, *m.*; question, *f.*; cause, *f.*; **in — that,** au cas que.
**cash,** comptant, *m.*
**cast,** jeter; **— a glance around,** promener un regard; **— down** (*the eyes*), baisser.
**Castilian,** castillan.
**castle,** château, *m.*
**catch,** attraper; prendre; (*a train*) arriver à temps pour; **— a cold,** attraper un rhume.
**cause,** *v.*, causer; (*before an inf.*) faire.
**cause,** *n.*, cause, *f.*; lieu, *m.*, sujet, *m.*
**cease,** cesser, finir.
**ceiling,** plafond, *m.*
**celebrated,** célèbre; renommé.
**cent,** sou, *m.*; **per —,** pour cent.
**central,** central.
**century,** siècle, *m.*
**certain,** certain.
**certainly,** certainement; bien.
**chair,** chaise, *f.*
**chance,** chance, *f.*; occasion, *f.*; **by —,** par hasard.
**change,** *v.*, changer; **— one's coat,** changer d'habit; **— one's mind,** changer d'avis.
**change,** *n.*, changement, *m.*; (*cash*) monnaie, *f.*
**chapel,** chapelle, *f.*
**charitable,** charitable.
**charming,** charmant.
**chat,** causer.
**chatter,** jaser.
**cheek,** joue, *f.*
**cheer (— up),** réjouir.
**cheerful,** gai.
**chest,** coffre, *m.*
**chicken,** poulet, *m.*, poussin, *m.*
**chilblain,** engelure, *f.*
**child,** enfant, *m. and f.*
**childhood,** enfance, *f.*
**chocolate,** chocolat, *m.*
**choice,** choix, *m.*
**choose,** choisir.
**Christendom,** chrétienté, *f.*
**chronometer,** chronomètre, *m.*
**church,** église, *f.*
**Cid,** Cid, *m.*
**cigar,** cigare, *m.*
**circumstance,** circonstance, *f.*
**city,** ville, *f.*
**claim,** prétendre.
**clasp,** joindre.
**class,** classe, *f.*
**class-room,** classe, *f.*
**clean,** propre.
**clear,** clair.
**clearness,** clarté, *f.*
**clever,** habile, adroit.
**cling,** s'attacher (à), se cramponner (à).
**cloak,** manteau, *m.*
**clock,** pendule, *f.*
**close,** fermer; se refermer.
**clothe,** habiller, vêtir; revêtir.
**clothes,** habits, *m. pl.*
**cloud,** obscurcir.
**club,** club, *m.*, cercle, *m.*
**coarse,** gros.
**coat,** habit, *m.*
**coffee,** café, *m.*
**cold,** *adj.*, froid; *n.*, froid, *m.*; (*disease*) rhume, *m.*; **have a —,** être enrhumé; **catch (take) a —,** attraper un rhume, prendre froid, s'enrhumer; **be —** (*of weather*), faire froid.
**coldly,** froidement.
**colonel,** colonel, *m.*
**colonial,** colonial.
**colony,** colonie, *f.*
**combat,** combat, *m.*
**combined,** commun, d'ensemble.
**come,** venir; arriver; **come!,** allons!; **— again,** repasser, revenir; **— back,** revenir; **— down,** descendre; **— home,** rentrer, revenir chez soi; **— in,** rentrer; entrer; **— near** (*with inf.*), faillir; être sur le point (de); **— out from (forth from),** sortir; **— up,** arriver; **— to blows,** en venir aux mains.
**comfortable,** comfortable; **be —,** être bien.
**command,** ordonner, commander.
**commendation,** éloge, *m.*
**commission,** commission, *f.*
**commit,** commettre.

**committee,** comité, *m.*
**common,** commun; **the — people,** les petits.
**commonplace,** lieu (*m.*) commun.
**companion,** compagnon *m.*, compagne, *f.*
**compass,** boussole, *f.*
**complain,** se plaindre.
**completely,** complètement, tout à fait.
**complexion,** teint, *m.*
**compliment,** compliment, *m.*
**comply,** se soumettre (à), se plier (à), se conformer (à).
**compose,** composer.
**compromise,** compromettre.
**conceal,** cacher; dissimuler.
**concern,** concerner, regarder.
**concert,** concert, *m.*
**condemn,** condamner.
**condition,** condition, *f.*; état, *m.*
**conduct,** *v.*, conduire, diriger.
**conduct,** *n.*, conduite, *f.*
**conductor,** conducteur, *m.*
**confide,** confier.
**confidence,** confiance, *f.*
**confounded,** maudit.
**confusion,** trouble, *m.*
**congratulate,** féliciter.
**congratulation,** félicitation, *f.*
**conquer,** vaincre.
**conscience,** conscience, *f.*
**conscientiously,** consciencieusement.
**conscious, be — of,** se rendre compte de.
**consecutively,** de suite.
**consent,** *v.*, consentir.
**consent,** *n.*, consentement, *m.*
**conservatory,** conservatoire, *m.*
**consider,** considérer; regarder; avoir égard à; penser (à); songer (à).
**consideration,** égard, *m.*
**consist,** consister.
**console,** consoler.
**consternation,** consternation, *f.*
**consult,** consulter; s'adresser (à).
**consume,** consumer.
**contemplate,** contempler.
**content,** content, satisfait.
**contentment,** contentement, *m.*
**contest,** contester.
**continual,** continuel.
**continue,** continuer.
**continued,** continu, prolongé, soutenu.
**contrary,** contraire, *m.*; **on the —,** au contraire.
**contrast,** contraster.
**control,** contrôle, *m.*; autorité, *f.*; **have — over oneself,** avoir de l'empire sur soi.
**conveniently,** commodément.
**conversation,** conversation, *f.*; entretien, *m.*
**converse,** entretenir; causer.
**convey,** transporter.
**conveyance,** voiture, *f.*
**convince,** convaincre; persuader.
**convincing,** convaincant.
**coolness,** fraîcheur, *f.*
**coquetry,** coquetterie, *f.*
**corner,** coin, *m.*; angle, *m.*
**correspond,** correspondre; répondre.
**corrupter,** empoisonneur, *m.*
**cost,** coûter; se vendre.
**cottage, thatched —,** chaumière, *f.*
**count,** *v.*, compter.
**count,** *n.*, comte, *m.*
**countenance,** figure, *f.*
**countess,** comtesse, *f.*
**country,** pays, *m.*; patrie, *f.*; campagne, *f.*; province, *f.*; **in(to) the —,** à la campagne; en province; **— house,** maison (*f.*) de campagne.
**county,** comté, *m.*
**courage,** courage, *m.*
**course,** cours, *m.*; **of —,** naturellement, bien entendu, cela va sans dire.
**court,** cour, *f.*
**cousin,** cousin, *m.*, cousine, *f.*
**cover,** couvrir; recouvrir.
**covet,** convoiter.
**cow,** vache, *f.*
**crack,** fente, *f.*
**create,** créer.
**creature,** créature, *f.*
**creditor,** créancier, *m.*
**crew,** équipage, *m.*
**critic,** critique, *m.*
**cross,** *v.*, croiser; **— oneself,** se signer.
**cross,** *n.*, croix, *f.*
**cross,** *adj.*, de mauvais humeur; méchant.
**crossed,** croisé.
**crowd,** multitude, *f.*; foule, *f.*
**crown,** *v.*, couronner.
**crown,** *n.*, couronne; **half a —,** une demi-couronne.
**cruel,** cruel.
**cry,** crier; s'écrier.
**cultivate,** cultiver.
**cup,** tasse, *f.*
**cure,** remède, *m.*

**curtain,** rideau, *m.*
**customs,** mœurs, *f. pl.*; coutumes, *f. pl.*
**customs-inspection,** visite (*f.*) des colis (bagages).
**cut,** couper; **— down,** abattre.

D

**dance,** dancer.
**dancing,** dance, *f.*
**danger,** danger, *m.*
**dangerous,** dangereux.
**dare,** oser.
**dark,** sombre; brun; **be —,** faire nuit; **before it gets —,** avant qu'il fasse nuit; **— red,** d'un rouge sombre.
**date,** dater.
**daughter,** fille, *f.*
**dawn,** aube, *f.*
**day,** jour, *m.*; journée, *f.*; **all — (long),** (de) toute la journée; **— before yesterday,** avant hier; **every —,** tous les jours; **the next —,** le lendemain; **of former —s,** d'autrefois; **this — week,** d'aujourd'hui en huit; **to- —,** aujourd'hui; **New Year's —,** jour (*m.*) de l'an.
**daybreak,** point (*m.*) du jour, pointe (*f.*) du jour.
**daylight,** jour, *m.*
**dazzling,** éblouissant.
**dead,** mort.
**deaf-mute,** sourd-muet, *m.*
**deal,** *v.*, avoir affaire (à).
**deal,** *n.*, **a great —, a good —,** beaucoup.
**dear,** cher; **my —,** mon cher, ma chère; mon ami, mon amie.
**death,** mort, *f.*; **put to —,** faire périr.
**deceive,** tromper.
**December,** décembre, *m.*
**decide,** *v. a.*, décider; résoudre; *v. n.*, décider; se décider.
**decision,** décision, *f.*
**declamation,** déclamation, *f.*
**declare,** affirmer.
**decorate,** décorer.
**defect,** défaut, *m.*
**defend,** défendre.
**definition,** définition, *f.*
**delay,** délai, *m.*, retard, *m.*
**delicate,** délicat.
**delight,** enchanter, ravir.
**delighted,** enchanté, ravi.
**delve,** bêcher.
**demand,** demander, exiger.
**Demosthenes,** Démosthène.
**den,** antre, *m.*
**deny,** nier.
**departure,** départ *m.*
**depend,** dépendre; **— on,** dépendre de.
**deprive,** priver.
**deserve,** mériter.
**desire,** *v.*, désirer; vouloir; souhaiter.
**desire,** *n.*, désir, *m.*
**desk,** bureau, *m.*; pupitre, *m.*
**despair,** *v.*, désespérer.
**despair,** *n.*, désespoir, *m.*
**despatch,** dépêche, *f.*
**destroy,** détruire.
**detail,** détail, *m.*
**detain,** retenir; arrêter.
**determination,** volonté, *f.*
**deuce, the —,** diantre.
**devastate,** dévaster.
**devote,** dévouer (à); consacrer (à).
**dew,** rosée, *f.*
**diamond,** diamant, *m.*
**dictionary,** dictionnaire, *m.*
**die,** mourir.
**difference,** différence, *f.*
**difficult,** difficile.
**difficulty,** difficulté, *f.*; embarras, *m.*
**diffidence,** défiance, *f.*; modestie, *f.*
**dignity,** dignité, *f.*
**dilapidated,** délabré.
**dine,** dîner.
**dinner,** dîner, *m.*
**dint, by — of,** à force de.
**Diogenes,** Diogène.
**diplomat,** diplomate, *m.*
**diplomatic,** diplomatique.
**direct,** diriger.
**direction,** côté, *m.*
**disadvantage,** inconvénient, *m.*; désavantage, *m.*
**disappear,** disparaître.
**disappointment,** déception, *f.*
**disarm,** désarmer.
**discipline,** *v.*, discipliner.
**discipline,** *n.*, discipline, *f.*
**disconcert,** déconcerter.
**discount,** remise, *f.*; **give a —,** faire une remise.
**discover,** découvrir; s'apercevoir de.
**disdain,** *v.*, dédaigner.
**disdain,** *n.*, dédain, *m.*
**disease,** maladie, *f.*, mal, *m.*
**disfigured,** défiguré.
**dishevelled,** en désordre.
**dismiss,** renvoyer; congédier.

**dispose,** — **of,** se défaire (de); se débarrasser (de).
**dissatisfied,** mécontent.
**dissipate,** dissiper.
**distance,** éloignement, *m.*
**distinctly,** distinctement.
**distinguish,** distinguer.
**distinguished,** distingué.
**distress,** affliger.
**distressed,** affligé, désolé.
**distribute,** distribuer.
**distrust,** se défier de; se méfier de.
**divide,** diviser; partager.
**divine,** deviner.
**do,** faire; (*of health*) se porter; — **without,** se passer de; — **one's best,** faire de son mieux; — **you not?,** n'est-ce pas? ; **have to** — **with,** avoir affaire à; **have nothing to** — **with,** n'y être pour rien.
**doctor,** docteur, *m.*; médecin, *m.*
**dog,** chien, *m.*
**domain,** domaine, *m.*; propriété, *f.*
**domestic,** domestique, *m. and f.*
**door,** porte, *f.*; portière, *f.*
**double,** *v.*, doubler.
**double,** *n.*, double, *m.*
**double,** *adj.*, double.
**doubt,** *v.*, douter.
**doubt,** *n.*, doute, *m.*; **no** —, sans doute.
**doubtful,** douteux.
**down,** — **stairs,** en bas; au bas de l'escalier; **fall** — **stairs,** rouler en bas de l'escalier; — **there,** là-bas; **come** —, descendre; **grind** —, pressurer; **sit** —, s'asseoir; **stoop** —, se baisser.
**dozen,** douzaine, *f.*
**Draco,** Dracon.
**dramatic,** dramatique.
**draw,** — **out,** retirer.
**drawer,** tiroir, *m.*
**drawing,** dessein, *m.*
**drawing-room,** salon, *m.*
**dreadful,** terrible, épouvantable, affreux.
**dream,** rêve, *m.*
**dreary,** triste.
**dress,** *v.*, habiller; parer; (*of salads*) assaisonner.
**dress,** *n.*, robe, *f.*; **costume,** *m.*
**drink,** boire.
**drinking,** boire, *m.*
**drive (away),** *v.*, chasser; — **at** (*aim at*), vouloir en venir; — **out,**
**drive,** *n.*, promenade, *f.*; **take a** —, faire une promenade en voiture.
**drop, little** —, gouttelette, *f.*
**drown,** noyer.
**drum,** tambour, *m.*
**duchy,** duché, *m.*
**duke,** duc, *m.*
**during,** pendant, durant.
**duty,** devoir, *m.*
**dwell,** — **in,** habiter.

## E

**each,** chaque, tout; — **one,** chacun; — **other,** nous, vous, se; l'un l'autre.
**eagerly,** avidement; avec empressement.
**ear,** oreille, *f.*
**earlier,** de meilleure heure.
**early,** de bonne heure.
**earth,** terre, *f.*
**ease, be at** —, être à l'aise.
**easily,** facilement, aisément.
**east,** *n.*, est, *m.*
**east,** *adj.*, d'est, de l'est; — **wind,** vent (*m.*) d'est.
**easy,** aisé, facile; **rest** —, se tenir (rester) tranquille.
**eat,** manger.
**eating,** manger, *m.*
**ebony,** ébène, *f.*
**economy,** économie, *f.*
**edge,** bord, *m.*
**education,** éducation, *f.*
**eel,** anguille, *f.*
**effort,** effort, *m.*
**egg,** œuf, *m.*
**egotist,** égoïste, *m.*
**eh,** eh.
**eight,** huit.
**eighty,** quatre-vingt; — **-five,** quatre-vingt cinq.
**either,** ou; — . . . **or,** soit . . . soit; **not** . . . —, ne . . . pas . . . non plus.
**elegance,** élégance, *f.*
**elegant,** élégant.
**elegantly,** élégamment, avec élégance.
**element,** élément, *m.*
**elementary,** élémentaire.
**elevate,** élever.
**eleven,** onze.
**eloquence,** éloquence, *f.*
**eloquent,** éloquent.
**else,** autre.

**embark,** embarquer.
**embarrassment,** embarras, *m.*
**embrace,** embrasser.
**emotion,** émotion, *f.*
**emperor,** empereur, *m.*
**empire,** empire, *m.*
**empress,** impératrice, *f.*
**encircle,** encadrer.
**encourage,** encourager.
**end,** fin, *f.*; bout, *m.*
**enemy,** ennemi, *m.*
**energetic,** énergique.
**energy,** énergie, *f.*
**engage,** engager; retenir; prendre; inviter.
**engagement,** engagement, *m.*, invitation, *f.*
**England,** Angleterre, *f.*
**English,** anglais, (*lang.*) l'anglais, *m.*
**enjoy,** jouir de; goûter; **— oneself,** s'amuser.
**enlighten,** éclairer.
**ennui,** ennui, *m.*
**enormous,** énorme.
**enough,** assez.
**enter,** entrer.
**enterprise,** entreprise, *f.*
**entertain,** concevoir.
**enthusiastically,** avec enthousiasme.
**entire,** entier; tout.
**entirely,** entièrement; tout à fait; complètement.
**entreaty,** supplication, *f.*
**enumeration,** énumération, *f.*
**envious,** envieux.
**equal,** égal.
**equally,** également.
**equitable,** équitable.
**erect,** droit.
**escape,** échapper (à); se soustraire (à).
**escort,** escorter.
**especially,** surtout.
**essential,** essentiel.
**estate,** propriété, *f.*
**esteem,** *v.*, estimer.
**esteem,** *n.*, estime, *f.*
**estimable,** estimable.
**Europe,** Europe, *f.*
**Eve,** Ève.
**even,** même; seulement; **— if (though),** quand, quand même.
**evening,** soir, *m.*; soirée, *f.*; **last —,** hier (au) soir.
**event,** événement, *m.*; **at all —s,** du moins.
**ever,** (*always*) toujours; (*at any time*) jamais; **— so little,** tant soit peu; **more than —,** plus que jamais.
**every,** tout; chaque.
**everybody,** tout le monde.
**every one,** chacun.
**everything,** tout.
**everywhere,** partout.
**evident,** évident.
**evidently,** évidemment; bien.
**evil,** *n.*, mal, *m.*
**evil,** *adj.*, mauvais; méchant.
**exact,** exiger.
**exactly,** exactement, au juste; précisément, justement.
**examination,** examen, *m.*
**examine,** examiner.
**examiner,** examinateur, *m.*
**example,** exemple, *m.*
**exasperate,** exaspérer.
**exceed,** excéder.
**exceedingly,** extrêmement.
**excel,** exceller.
**excellent,** excellent.
**except,** *v.*, excepter.
**except (excepting),** *prep.*, excepté.
**exception,** exception, *f.*
**exchange,** **— for,** changer contre.
**excite,** **— pity,** apitoyer.
**exclaim,** s'écrier.
**exclude,** exclure.
**excuse,** *v.*, excuser; **— me,** pardon, pardonnez-moi, excusez-moi, je vous demande pardon.
**excuse,** *n.*, excuse, *f.*; prétexte, *m.*
**execute,** exécuter; affectuer; accomplir.
**exercise,** exercice, *m.*; devoir, *m.*, thème, *m.*
**exert,** **— an influence,** agir.
**exhaust,** épuiser.
**exhausted, be —,** n'en pouvoir plus.
**exist,** exister.
**expect,** s'attendre à; penser; vouloir.
**expenditure,** dépense, *f.*; dépenses, *f. pl.*
**expense,** dépense, *f.*
**experience,** éprouver.
**explain,** expliquer.
**explanation,** explication, *f.*
**expose,** exposer.
**express,** *v.*, exprimer; indiquer.
**express,** *n.*, express, *m.*
**expression,** expression, *f.*
**expressive,** expressif.
**extent,** étendue, *f.*; **to such an —,** au point, à un tel point.

**extort,** se faire donner.
**extraordinary,** extraordinaire.
**eye,** œil, *m.*, (*pl.*) yeux; **in the —s of,** à l'égard de.

F

**fable,** fable, *f.*
**face,** figure, *f.*; visage, *m.*
**fact,** vérité, *f.*; fait, *m.*; **in —,** en effet.
**faculty,** faculté, *f.*
**fail,** manquer.
**faith,** foi, *f.*
**faithful,** fidèle.
**faithfully,** fidèlement.
**fall,** tomber.
**family,** famille, *f.*
**famous,** fameux.
**far,** loin; **— away,** loin, très loin; **how — is it?,** combien y a-t-il?
**farewell, bid —,** faire ses adieux (à), dire adieu (à).
**farther,** plus loin.
**fascinate,** séduire.
**fashion,** mode, *f.*
**fast,** vite; (*of watches*) **be —,** avancer.
**fate,** sort, *m.*
**father,** père, *m.*
**father-in-law,** beau-père, *m.*
**fatigue,** fatigue, *f.*
**fault,** faute, *f.*; défaut, *m.*; **find — with,** blâmer.
**faultless,** sans défaut; sans faute.
**favor,** faveur, *f.*
**favorable,** favorable.
**fear,** *v.*, craindre, avoir peur (de, que).
**fear,** *n.*, crainte, *f.*; peur, *f.*
**feast,** festin, *m.*
**feature,** trait, *m.*
**February,** février, *m.*
**fee,** pourboire, *m.*
**feel,** sentir; **— well,** se porter bien.
**feign,** feindre.
**feigned,** faux.
**fellow,** garçon, *m.*; **a fine —,** un brave homme.
**fertility,** fertilité, *f.*
**fête,** fête, *f.*
**fever,** fièvre, *f.*
**few,** peu, peu de; quelques; **a —,** quelques.
**field,** champ, *m.*
**fifteen,** quinze.
**fifth,** cinquième; cinq.
**fifty,** cinquante.
**fight,** combattre.
**fill,** remplir.
**final,** dernier.
**finally,** enfin, à la fin.
**financier,** financier, *m.*
**find,** trouver; **— out,** se rendre compte (de).
**fine,** *n.*, amende, *f.*
**fine,** *adj.*, beau; fameux; **a — fellow,** un brave homme; **it is — (weather),** il fait beau (temps).
**finger,** doigt, *m.*
**finish,** finir.
**fire,** incendie, *f.*; feu, *m.*
**firm,** ferme.
**first,** *adj.*, premier.
**first,** *adv.*, d'abord; **at —,** d'abord.
**first-class,** de première classe.
**fish,** poisson, *m.*
**fitted,** propre (à); fait (pour).
**five,** cinq.
**fixed,** fixe.
**flag,** drapeau, *m.*
**flatter,** flatter.
**flatterer,** flatteur, *m.*
**flee,** fuir.
**floor,** plancher, *m.*; **on the ground —,** au rez-de-chaussée.
**flower,** fleur, *f.*
**flush,** *v.*, rougir.
**flush,** *n.*, rougeur, *f.*
**fold,** plier.
**follow,** suivre; **— a profession, faire un** métier.
**fond, be — of,** aimer.
**fool,** fou, *m.*; imbécile, *m. and f.*
**foolish,** sot; fou (*f.* folle).
**foot,** pied, *m.*
**fop,** petit-maître, *m.*
**for,** *prep.*, pour; de; à; pendant; par; il y a, depuis; **— all that,** tout de même; ne pas laisser de; **as —,** pour, quant à.
**for,** *conj.*, car.
**forbid,** défendre; **God —,** à Dieu ne plaise.
**force,** *v.*, contraindre, forcer.
**force,** *n.*, force, *f.*
**foreign,** extérieur.
**foreigner,** étranger, *m.*
**forever,** toujours.
**forget,** oublier.
**fork,** fourche, *f.*
**form,** *v.*, former.
**form,** *n.*, forme, *f.*

**formality,** formalité, *f.*
**former,** ancien; **the —,** celui-là; **of — days,** d'autrefois.
**formerly,** autrefois.
**forsake,** abandonner; quitter.
**forth, come — from,** sortir.
**forthwith,** aussitôt.
**fortunate,** heureux.
**fortunately,** heureusement.
**fortune,** fortune, *f.*
**forward, spring —,** s'élancer.
**found,** fonder.
**foundation,** fondement, *m.*; base, *f.*
**founding,** fondation, *f.*
**four,** quatre.
**fourteenth,** quatorzième.
**fourth,** quatrième; quatre.
**franc,** franc, *m.*
**France,** France, *f.*
**Francis,** François.
**frankly,** franchement.
**frankness,** franchise, *f.*
**Frederick,** Frédéric.
**free,** libre; **set —,** délivrer.
**freely,** librement.
**freeze,** geler.
**French,** français, (*lang.*) le français, *m.*; **a — woman,** une Française.
**frequent,** fréquenter; hanter.
**frequently,** souvent.
**fresh,** frais (*f.* fraîche).
**freshen,** rafraîchir.
**Friday,** vendredi, *m.*
**friend,** ami, *m.*, amie, *f.*
**friendless,** sans ami.
**friendship,** amitié, *f.*
**fright,** peur, *f.*; effroi, *m.*; effarement, *m.*
**frighten,** effrayer, faire peur à.
**frightened,** effrayé, effaré; **be —,** avoir peur.
**frightful,** affreux.
**from,** de; à partir de; depuis; **— me,** de ma part.
**froth,** écume, *f.*
**frozen,** glacé.
**fruit,** fruit, *m.*
**full,** plein; **be — of,** avoir beaucoup de.
**fully,** entièrement; au moins, pour le moins.
**fume,** fumée, *f.*
**fun, have —,** s'amuser; **make — of,** se moquer de.
**furniture,** meubles, *m. pl.*; mobilier, *m.*; **piece of —,** meuble, *m.*
**fury,** fureur, *f.*
**future,** *n.*, avenir, *m.*
**future,** *adj.*, future.

## G

**gaiety,** gaieté, *f.*
**gaily,** gaiement.
**gain,** gagner.
**gait,** allure, *f.*; marche, *f.*; pas, *m.*
**gallery,** galerie, *f.*
**game,** jeu, *m.*; partie, *f.*
**garden,** jardin, *m.*
**gas,** gaz, *m.*; **— jet,** bec (*m.*) de gaz.
**gate,** porte, *f.*
**gather,** amasser.
**gayety,** gaieté, *f.*
**gaze (at),** regarder.
**general,** général, *m.*
**generally,** généralement; ordinairement.
**generous,** généreux; libéral.
**Geneva,** Genève, *f.*
**genius,** génie, *m.*
**gentle,** doux.
**gentleman,** monsieur, *m.*; gentilhomme, *m.*
**gently,** doucement.
**geography,** géographie, *f.*
**George,** Georges.
**German,** allemand, (*lang.*) l'allemand, [*m.*
**Germany,** Allemagne, *f.*
**get,** obtenir, se procurer, avoir; tenir; **— along without,** se passer de; **— angry,** se fâcher; **— away,** soustraire; **— back,** revenir; rentrer; **— home,** rentrer; **— loose,** se dégager; **— married,** se marier; **— out,** s'en aller; descendre; sortir; **— ready,** se disposer; **— rid of,** se débarrasser de; **— up,** se lever; monter; **— well,** (se) guérir; se rétablir; **go and —,** aller chercher.
**gift,** cadeau, *m.*
**girl,** fille, *f.*, jeune fille, *f.*
**give,** donner; accorder; (**— an answer**) faire; **— back,** rendre; céder; **— way,** succomber.
**glad,** aise; content; réjoui.
**gladly,** avec plaisir; volontiers.
**glance,** regard, *m.*; **cast a — around,** promener un regard.
**glasses,** lunettes, *f. pl.*
**gloomy,** morne, triste; sombre.
**glove,** gant, *m.*

**go,** aller; se rendre; partir; **— about,** se prendre à; **— after,** aller chercher; **— away,** s'en aller; partir; **— home,** aller (se rendre) chez moi, toi, *etc.*; rentrer; **— in,** entrer; **— off,** se retirer; s'en aller; **— on** (*take place*), se passer; **— out,** sortir; **— to bed,** (aller) se coucher.
**God,** Dieu, *m.*; **— grant!,** plaise à Dieu!; **— forbid!,** à Dieu ne plaise!; **would to — !,** plût à Dieu!
**gold,** or, *m.*
**golf,** golf, *m.*
**good,** *n.*, bien, *m.*
**good,** *adj.*, bon; gentil; fort; beau; **— man,** homme de bien; **—natured,** d'un bon naturel; **have a — time,** s'amuser (bien); **make —,** réparer; (*int.*) à la bonne heure!
**good,** *adv.*, bien.
**good-by,** adieu; au revoir.
**good-will,** bonne volonté, *f.*; bienveillance, *f.*
**govern,** gouverner.
**governess,** gouvernante, *f.*
**graceful,** gracieux, plein de grace.
**gracious,** gracieux.
**grain,** grain, *m.*
**grand,** grand.
**grandee,** grand, *m.*
**grandeur,** grandeur, *f.*
**grandfather,** grand-père, *m.*
**grandparents,** grand-parents, *m. pl.*
**grant,** accorder; **God — !,** plaise à Dieu!; **Heaven — !,** fasse le ciel!
**grateful,** reconnaissant.
**grave,** grave.
**great,** grand; gros; **a — deal (many),** beaucoup.
**Great Britain,** Grande-Bretagne, *f.*
**Grecian,** grec.
**green,** vert.
**greet,** saluer.
**grief,** deuil, *m.*
**grieve,** affliger; faire de la peine.
**grind,** moudre; **— down,** pressurer.
**groan,** gémissement, *m.*
**groom,** groom, *m.*
**ground,** sol, *m.*; **on the — floor,** au rez-de-chaussée.
**grow,** *v.*, grandir; (*are grown*) se cultiver; **— larger,** grandir; **— old,** vieillir; se faire vieux.
[illegible]. *adj.*, **— -up people,** les grandes [illegible]
**grudge, have a — against,** en vouloir à.
**grumble,** grogner.
**guard,** garde, *m. and f.*; **body- —,** garde (*f.*) du corps.
**guess,** deviner.
**guest,** hôte, *m.*; invité, *m.*
**guilty,** coupable.

## H

**habit,** habitude, *f.*
**habitation,** habitation, *f.*
**hair,** cheveux, *m. pl.*
**half,** moitié, *f.*; demie, *f.*; demi, *m.*; **— hour,** demi-heure, *f.*; **the — hours,** les demies, *f.*
**half-measure,** demi-mesure, *f.*
**hall,** salle, *f.*
**hammer,** masse, *f.*
**hand,** main, *f.*; **shake —s with,** serrer (donner) la main à; **on the other —,** de l'autre côté.
**handsome,** beau.
**hang,** pendre; **— up,** accrocher.
**happen,** arriver; se passer; **— by chance to be,** se trouver par hasard.
**happy,** heureux; content.
**hard,** *adj.*, dur; difficile.
**hard,** *adv.*, **so —,** tant.
**hardly,** ne . . . guère; à peine; **I can — believe it,** j'ai peine à le croire.
**harm,** *v.*, nuire; **do —,** nuire.
**harm,** *n.*, mal, *m.*
**harvest,** récolte, *f.*
**hasten,** 'hâter; courir.
**hastily,** à la hâte.
**hat,** chapeau, *m.*
**hate,** 'haïr, détester.
**have,** avoir; posséder; (*cause to be done*) faire; (*as auxiliary*) avoir, être; **— a grudge against,** en vouloir à; **— just,** venir de; **— on** (*of clothes*), porter; **— to,** falloir; **we — to,** il nous faut; **— to do with,** avoir affaire à.
**hay, turn —,** faner.
**he,** il, lui; ce; **— who,** celui qui.
**head,** tête, *f.*; **with bowed —,** la tête basse.
**headache,** mal (*m.*) de tête; **have a —,** avoir mal à la tête.
**healing,** guérison, *f.*
**health,** santé, *f.*
**hear,** entendre; **— from,** recevoir des nouvelles de.

**heart,** cœur, *m.*; **take to —,** prendre à cœur; **with a heavy —,** le cœur gros.
**heat,** chaleur, *f.*, chaud, *m.*
**Heaven,** ciel, *m.*
**heavenly,** céleste.
**heavy,** lourd; **with a — heart,** le cœur gros.
**heiress,** héritière, *f.*
**help,** *v.*, aider, assister; **how can I — it?,** que voulez-vous que j'y fasse?; **— out of,** tirer de; **I can't — it,** je n'y peux rien.
**help,** *n.*, aide, *f.*; assistance, *f.*
**hen,** poule, *f.*
**Henry,** Henri.
**her,** *pron.*, la; elle; celle; lui; **to —,** lui, à elle.
**her,** *adj.*, son, sa, ses.
**here,** ici; tiens!, tenez!; **— is,** voici; **— I am,** me voici.
**heritage,** héritage, *m.*
**hers,** le sien; à elle.
**herself,** elle-même; se.
**hesitate,** hésiter.
**hide,** cacher; se cacher.
**high,** 'haut; élevé; grand; **— mass,** grand' messe, *f.*; **as — as,** jusqu'à.
**highway,** grande route, *f.*
**him,** le; lui; celui.
**himself,** lui, lui-même; se, soi.
**his,** *pron.*, le sien; à lui.
**his,** *adj.*, son, sa, ses.
**history,** histoire, *f.*
**hoarse,** enroué; **get (grow) —,** s'enrouer.
**hold,** tenir; **— one's tongue,** se taire.
**hole,** trou, *m.*
**Holland,** 'Hollande, *f.*
**home,** chez soi, *m.*, maison, *f.*, logis, *m.*; (*fig.*) asile, *m.*; **at —,** chez moi, toi, *etc.*, à la maison; **be at —** (*receive*), recevoir; **come —,** revenir chez moi, *etc.*, rentrer; **get —,** rentrer; **go —,** aller (se rendre) chez moi, toi, *etc.*; rentrer; **return —,** rentrer.
**homely,** laid.
**honest,** intègre; honnête; probe.
**honesty,** honnêteté, *f.*
**honor,** *v.*, honorer.
**honor,** *n.*, honneur, *m.*
**honorable,** honorable.
**hope,** *v.*, espérer.
**hope,** *n.*, espérance, *f.*; espoir, *m.*
**horizon,** horizon, *m.*
**horse,** cheval, *m.*
**horseback, on —,** à cheval.
**hot,** chaud; **— weather,** les chaleurs, *f. pl.*; **be —,** faire chaud.
**hotel,** hôtel, *m.*
**hour,** heure, *f.*
**house,** maison, *f.*; hôtel, *m.*; **country —,** maison (*f.*) de campagne; **at your —,** chez vous.
**hovel,** masure, *f.*
**how,** comment; combien; comme; de quelle manière; que!; **— can I help it?,** que voulez-vous que j'y fasse?; **— far is it,** combien y a-t-il; **— long,** combien de temps; **— many,** combien; **— much,** combien.
**however,** cependant, pourtant; d'ailleurs; tout; quelque . . . que, si . . . que; **— bad he may be,** si mauvais qu'il soit; **— it may be,** quoi qu'il en soit.
**Huguenot,** 'Huguenot, *m.*
**humble,** humble.
**humiliate,** humilier.
**hundred,** cent.
**hunger,** faim, *f.*
**hungry, be — (feel —),** avoir faim; **be very —,** avoir grand' faim.
**hunt,** chasser; **go —ing,** aller à la chasse.
**hurry,** presser; se dépêcher; **be in a (great) —,** être (très) pressé.
**hurt,** *v. n.*, avoir mal; *v. a.*, faire mal (à).
**husband,** mari, *m.*
**hut,** masure, *f.*; chaumière, *f.*; cabane, *f.*

## I

**I,** je, moi.
**idea,** idée, *f.*
**identify,** identifier.
**idleness,** paresse, *f.*; oisiveté, *f.*
**if,** si; **even —,** quand, quand même.
**ignorant, be — of,** ignorer.
**ill,** *n.*, mal, *m.*
**ill,** *adj.*, malade.
**ill,** *adv.*, mal.
**ill-assured,** mal assuré.
**illness,** maladie, *f.*
**illustrious,** illustre; glorieux; célèbre.
**image,** image, *m.*
**imaginary,** imaginaire.
**imagine,** imaginer; s'imaginer; se représenter.

**imitate**, imiter.
**immediately**, tout de suite; immédiatement; sur l'heure; aussitôt.
**immemorial**, immémorial.
**immense**, immense.
**immortal**, immortel.
**impartial**, impartial.
**important**, important.
**impossible**, impossible.
**impression**, impression, *f.*
**imprison**, emprisonner.
**imprisonment**, emprisonnement, *m.*
**impudence**, 'hardiesse, *f.*; toupet, *m.*
**impudently**, effrontément.
**in**, dans; en; à; de; par; — **order to**, pour, afin de; pour que, afin que; — **spite of**, malgré; — **that**, là; **be —**, y être, être chez soi, etc.; être à la maison.
**incapable**, incapable.
**incessantly**, sans cesse; continuellement.
**inch**, pouce, *m.*
**income**, recette, *f.*; revenu, *m.*
**inconvenience**, inconvénient, *m.*
**increase**, augmenter.
**incrust**, incruster.
**indeed**, bien; en effet, vraiment; **no —!**, vraiment non!
**indigence**, misère, *f.*
**indigestible**, indigeste.
**indisposed**, indisposé.
**indulgence**, indulgence, *f.*
**infernal**, infernal.
**infirmity**, infirmité, *f.*
**influence (exert an —)**, agir.
**inform**, — **about** (**of**), mettre au courant de.
**information, a piece of —**, un renseignement.
**informed**, informé; instruit; **keep —**, tenir au courant.
**inn**, auberge, *f.*
**inn-keeper**, maître d'hôtel, *m.*
**innocence**, innocence, *f.*
**innocent**, innocent.
**inoffensive**, inoffensif.
**inspector**, inspecteur, *m.*
**inspiration**, inspiration, *f.*
**inspire**, inspirer.
**install**, installer.
**instant**, instant, *m.*
**instead**, — **of**, au lieu de.
**insult**, affront, *m.*; insulte, *f.*, injure, *f.*
***intelligent***, *intelligent*.
**intend**, se proposer (de), avoir l'intention (de), avoir dessein (de).
**interest**, *v.*, intéresser.
**interest**, *n.*, intérêt, *m.*
**interesting**, intéressant.
**interior**, intérieur, *m.*
**interrupt**, interrompre.
**into**, dans, en; — **it**, y.
**introduce**, présenter.
**invalid**, malade, *m.*
**invitation**, invitation, *f.*
**invite**, inviter.
**irresistible**, irrésistible.
**irritate**, irriter; **become —d**, s'irriter.
**it**, il, elle, ce; le, la; cela; **about —**, **for —**, **of —**, en; **in —**, y.
**Italian**, italien.
**Italy**, Italie, *f.*
**its**, *pron.*, le sien.
**its**, *adj.*, son, sa, ses; en.
**itself**, soi; se; lui-même.

## J

**jam**, confiture, *f.*
**January**, janvier, *m.*
**jealous**, jaloux.
**jet**, bec, *m.*; **gas —**, bec (*m.*) de gaz.
**jeweller**, joaillier, *m.*
**John**, Jean.
**join**, joindre; rejoindre.
**journey**, voyage, *m.*
**Jove, by —**, parbleu, tudieu.
**jovial**, jovial, gai.
**joy**, joie, *f.*
**joyfully**, joyeusement.
**joyous**, joyeux.
**judge**, *v.*, juger.
**judge**, *n.*, juge, *m.*; **be a — of**, se connaître à *or* en, être connaisseur en.
**jump**, sauter.
**June**, juin, *m.*
**jurisconsult**, jurisconsulte, *m.*
**just**, *adj.*, juste.
**just**, *adv.*, juste, justement; bien; donc; immédiatement; tout; — **a little**, tant soit peu; — **now**, tout à l'heure; **have —**, venir de; **so —**, donc.
**justice**, justice, *f.*

## K

**keep**, tenir; garder; conserver; — **informed**, tenir au courant; — **quiet**, se taire; — **still**, rester (se tenir) tranquille.

**keeper,** maître, *m.*
**key,** clef, *f.*
**keyhole,** trou (*m.*) de serrure.
**kill,** tuer; faire mourir.
**kind,** *n.*, espèce, *f.*
**kind,** *adj.*, bon, aimable; **be — enough to,** avoir la bonté de.
**kindness,** bonté, *f.*
**king,** roi, *m.*
**kitchen,** cuisine, *f.*
**knee, fall on one's —s,** se mettre à genoux.
**knife,** couteau, *m.*
**knock,** frapper.
**knout,** *v.*, knouter.
**knout,** *n.*, knout, *m.*
**know,** savoir; connaître; **not to —,** ignorer; **— about,** savoir; **— how to,** savoir.
**knowledge,** savoir, *m.*

## L

**labor,** *v.*, peiner; **— so hard,** tant peiner.
**labor,** *n.*, travail, *m.*
**lack, I am still —ing,** il me faut encore.
**lady,** dame, *f.*; **young —,** demoiselle, *f.*
**lair,** gîte, *m.*
**lamentation,** plainte, *f.*
**lamprey,** lamproie, *f.*
**land,** terre, *f.*; **native —,** patrie, *f.*
**landlord,** propriétaire, *m.*
**language,** langue, *f.*
**large,** grand; gros; considérable; **grow —r,** grandir.
**last,** *v.*, durer.
**last,** *adj.*, dernier; passé; **— evening (night),** hier (au) soir; **— night,** cette nuit; *adv.*, **at —,** enfin.
**late,** *adv.*, tard; en retard; **be —,** tarder; être en retard; **be getting (growing) —,** se faire tard.
**late** (*deceased*), feu.
**lately, but —,** dernièrement, jadis.
**latter,** celui-ci.
**laugh,** rire.
**laughter,** rire, *m.*
**lavishness,** largesse, *f.*; prodigalité, *f.*
**law,** loi, *f.*
**lawsuit,** procès, *m.*
**lay,** déposer.
**laziness,** oisiveté, *f.*
**lazy,** paresseux.
**lead,** mener; conduire; **— away (off),** emmener.
**leaf,** feuille, *f.*
**league,** lieue, *f.*
**lean,** *v.*, s'appuyer; peser.
**lean,** *adj.*, amaigri.
**learn,** apprendre.
**learned,** savant, instruit.
**least,** (*adj.*) (le) moindre; (*adv.*) le moins; **at —,** au moins; du moins; pour le moins.
**leave,** laisser; partir; quitter; sortir de; **— off,** en rester.
**lecture,** cours, *m.*; conférence, *f.*
**leg,** jambe, *f.*
**lemonade,** limonade, *f.*
**lend,** prêter.
**length,** longueur, *f.*; **at —,** enfin.
**less,** moins.
**lesson,** leçon, *f.*
**lest,** de peur que, de crainte que.
**let,** laisser, permettre; **— me see,** voyons.
**letter,** lettre, *f.*; (*print*) caractère, *m.*
**liberal,** libéral; généreux.
**liberty,** liberté, *f.*
**lie,** *v.*, mentir.
**lie,** *n.*, mensonge, *m.*
**lieutenant,** lieutenant, *m.*
**life,** vie, *f.*
**lift,** lever, soulever; enlever.
**light (up),** *v.*, allumer; éclairer.
**light,** *n.*, lumière, *f.*; **as soon as it was —,** dès le jour.
**light,** *adj.*, **— auburn,** châtain clair; blond.
**lightly,** légèrement.
**like,** *v.*, aimer; vouloir; désirer; trouver.
**like,** *adj.*, semblable.
**like,** *adv.*, *prep.*, comme; en.
**line,** ligne, *f.*
**lip,** lèvre, *f.*
**listen,** écouter.
**little,** *adj.*, petit.
**little,** *adv.*, peu; **ever so —,** tant soit peu; **just a —,** tant soit peu.
**live,** vivre; demeurer; habiter; **— on,** vivre de; **— in,** habiter.
**lively,** animé; enjoué; gai.
**livery,** livrée, *f.*
**living,** vivant.
**load,** charger.
**lock,** serrure, *f.*; (*of hair*) mèche, *f.*, boucle, *f.*
**lodge,** loger.
**logic,** logique, *f.*
**London,** Londres.

**long**, *v.*, tarder (*impersonal*); avoir envie (de).
**long**, *adj.*, *adv.*, long; longtemps; **all day —**, (de) toute la journée; **as — as**, aussi longtemps que; **how — does it take to**, combien de temps faut-il pour; **ninety feet —**, long de, etc.
**longer**, **not . . . any —**, ne . . . plus; **no —**, ne . . . plus.
**look**, *v.*, regarder; (*seem*) avoir l'air, paraître, sembler; **— alike**, avoir le même air; **— at**, regarder; **— for**, chercher; **— in vain**, avoir beau regarder; **— well**, avoir bonne mine.
**look**, *n.*, apparence, *f.*; air, *m.*
**loose**, **get —**, se dégager.
**lord**, lord, *m.*
**lord-mayor**, lord-maire, *m.*
**lordship**, seigneurie, *f.*
**lose**, perdre.
**loss**, perte, *f.*
**lost**, perdu.
**lot**, sort, *m.*
**loud**, 'haut, fort.
**louis**, louis, *m.*
**Louvre**, Louvre, *m.*
**love**, *v.*, aimer.
**love**, *n.*, amour, *m.*
**low**, bas; vil.
**loyal**, loyal.
**luck**, fortune, *f.*; **be in —**, avoir de la chance.
**lucky**, heureux.
**lump**, morceau, *m.*
**lunch**, déjeuner, *m.*

## M

**mad**, fou.
**madam**, madame, *f.* (*pl.* mesdames).
**madly**, furieusement.
**magistrate**, magistrat, *m.*
**magnificent**, magnifique.
**maid**, bonne, *f.*; domestique, *m. and f.*
**maintain**, maintenir.
**majesty**, majesté, *f.*; **His (Her) —**, Sa majesté.
**make**, faire; rendre; **— fun of**, se moquer de; **— good**, réparer; **— oneself master of**, se rendre maître de; **— up**, se réconcilier, faire la paix; **— (earn) money**, faire (gagner) de l'argent; **—** (=*compel*), faire; **— use of**, *se servir de*.
**malicious**, malicieux; malin.
**malignant**, malin; méchant.
**man**, homme, *m.*; **old —**, vieillard, *m.*; **the (a) — who**, celui qui.
**mankind**, le genre humain; les hommes, *m. pl.*
**manner**, manière, *f.*; allures, *f. pl.*; **good —s**, savoir-vivre, *m.*; bonnes manières, *f. pl.*
**mantle**, manteau, *m.*
**manufacturer**, fabriquant, *m.*, manufacturier, *m.*
**many**, beaucoup (de); bien (des); **so —**, tant (de); **how —**, combien (de); **— a**, maint; **as —**, autant (de); **— of them**, beaucoup d'entre eux; **many persons (people)**, beaucoup de personnes.
**March**, mars, *m.*
**marquis**, marquis, *m.*
**marriage**, mariage, *m.*
**marry**, (*take in marriage*) épouser, se marier avec; (*give in marriage*), marier; **get married**, se marier.
**Marseilles**, Marseille, *f.*
**martyr**, martyr, *m.*
**marvellous**, merveilleux.
**marvellously**, merveilleusement.
**Mary**, Marie.
**mass**, messe, *f.*
**master**, maître, *m.*
**masterpiece**, chef-d'œuvre, *m.*
**match**, allumette, *f.*; (*person to be married*) parti, *m.*
**material** (*stuff for clothing*), étoffe, *f.*
**mathematician**, mathématicien, *m.*
**mathematics**, mathématiques, *f. pl.*
**matter**, *v.*, importer; **that doesn't —**, n'importe; cela ne fait rien.
**matter**, *n.*, affaire, *f.*; chose, *f.*; **what is the — with you?**, qu'avez-vous?; **what is the —?**, qu'y a-t-il?, de quoi s'agit-il?
**may**, *v.*, pouvoir; **that — be, it — be so**, cela se peut; **it — be that**, il se peut que; **I might have**, j'aurais pu.
**May**, *n.*, mai, *m.*
**mayor**, maire, *m.*; **lord- —**, lord-maire, *m.*
**me**, me; moi; **to —**, me; moi; à moi.
**meadow**, prairie, *f.*; pré, *m.*
**meal**, repas, *m.*
**mean**, *v.*, vouloir dire, entendre.
**mean**, *adj.*, méprisable; bas; **in the — time**, pendant ce temps(-là).

**means** (*pecuniary*), moyens, *m. pl.*; fortune, *f.*; **— of subsistence,** gagne-pain, *m.*
**measure,** mesure, *f.*
**meet,** rencontrer; se retrouver; **to go to — him,** aller à sa rencontre.
**member,** membre, *m.*
**mend,** raccommoder.
**mention,** mentionner; **don't — it,** il n'y a pas de quoi.
**merchant,** négociant, *m.*; marchand, *m.*
**mercy,** grâce, *f.*
**merely,** seulement; rien que; **to —,** se contenter (de).
**metal,** métal, *m.*
**middle,** milieu, *m.*
**midnight,** minuit, *m.*
**midst,** milieu, *m.*
**mile,** mille, *m.*
**milk,** lait, *m.*
**mind,** esprit, *m.*; **change one's —,** changer d'avis.
**mine,** le mien; à moi.
**minister,** ministre, *m.*
**minute,** minute, *f.*
**mirror,** miroir, *m.*
**miser,** avare, *m. and f.*
**miserable,** misérable; pauvre; malheureux.
**miserly,** avare.
**misfortune,** malheur, *m.*
**misplace,** déplacer.
**Miss,** Mademoiselle, *f.*
**mistake,** faute, *f.*; **make a —,** se tromper.
**mistaken, be —,** se tromper.
**mistress,** maîtresse, *f.*
**mistrust,** se défier de.
**mixture,** mélange, *m.*
**moan, moaning,** plainte, *f.*
**mob,** foule, *f.*
**Mocha,** Moka, *m.*
**mock,** se moquer de.
**mocker,** moqueur, *m.*, railleur, *m.*
**mocking,** railleur.
**modern,** moderne.
**modest,** modeste.
**modesty,** modestie, *f.*
**moment,** instant, *m.*; moment, *m.*
**monarch,** monarque, *m.*
**Monday,** lundi, *m.*
**money,** argent, *m.*; **make (earn) —,** faire (gagner) de l'argent.
**month,** mois, *m.*; **what is the day of the —?,** quel est le quantième du mois? (see §16); **in the — of,** au (dans le) mois de.
**monument,** monument, *m.*
**moonlight,** clair (*m.*) de lune; **it is —,** il y a clair de lune.
**moral,** *n.*, morale, *f.*; **—s,** *pl.*, mœurs, *f. pl.*; morale, *f.*
**moral,** *adj.*, moral.
**morality,** moralité, *f.*
**more,** plus (de); encore; davantage; de plus; **the — . . . the —,** plus . . . plus; **be worth —,** valoir mieux; **not any —,** ne . . . plus; **so much the —,** d'autant plus; **any —,** davantage, encore; **— and —,** de plus en plus; **much —,** bien davantage; **I have some —,** j'en ai encore; **I have no — (not any —),** je n'en ai plus; **some — coffee,** encore du café; **— than one,** plus d'un.
**moreover,** d'ailleurs.
**morning,** matin, *m.*; aurore, *f.*
**most, the —,** le plus (de); la plupart (de *or* d'entre); **at the —,** tout au plus; **— part,** la plupart de (d'entre); (=*very*) très, bien; **— people,** la plupart des gens.
**mother,** mère, *f.*
**mouth,** bouche, *f.*
**move,** bouger; se remuer; (=*change residence*) déménager; **— away,** éloigner; **— from,** s'écarter (de).
**movement,** mouvement, *m.*
**moving,** déménagement, *m.*
**Mr.,** monsieur, *m.*
**Mrs.,** madame, *f.*
**much,** beaucoup; **very —,** beaucoup, fort; **so —,** tant; **too —,** trop; **how —?,** combien (de)?; **so — the more,** d'autant plus; **so — the less,** d'autant moins; **— more,** bien davantage; **as — as,** autant que.
**museum,** musée, *m.*
**music,** musique, *f.*; **— master,** maître (*m.*) de musique.
**must,** falloir, devoir; **you — have,** vous avez dû . . . ; **I — go,** il me faut partir, il faut que je parte.
**mutual,** mutuel.
**my,** mon, ma, mes.
**myself,** me; moi; moi-même.

N

**naïve,** naïf.
**naïvely,** naïvement.

**name,** *v.*, appeler, nommer.
**name,** *n.*, nom, *m.*
**Napoleon,** Napoléon.
**nation,** nation, *f.*
**native, — land,** patrie, *f.*, pays natal, *m.*
**natural,** naturel.
**naturally,** naturellement.
**nature,** nature, *f.*
**near,** *adj.*, voisin, proche.
**near,** *prep.*, près de, auprès de; **come —,** faillir, être sur le point de.
**near,** *adv.*, près, auprès.
**nearly,** presque; près de; **I — fell,** j'ai manqué de tomber; j'ai failli (pensé) tomber.
**necessary,** *n.*, nécessaire, *m.*
**necessary,** *adj.*, nécessaire; **to be —,** falloir.
**necessity,** nécessité, *f.*
**need,** *v.*, avoir besoin de, falloir.
**need,** *n.*, besoin, *m.*; **be in — of,** avoir besoin de.
**needless,** inutile; **to be —,** avoir beau; inutile de.
**neglect,** négliger.
**negro,** nègre, *m.*
**neighbor,** voisin, *m.*; (*fig.*) prochain, *m.*
**neighborhood,** environs, *m. pl.*; voisinage, *m.*
**neighboring,** voisin.
**neither,** ni l'un ni l'autre (. . . ne); **— . . . nor,** (ne . . . ) ni . . . ni.
**Nero,** Néron.
**never,** (ne . . . ) jamais.
**nevertheless,** néanmoins, cependant, pourtant.
**new,** nouveau, neuf; **—comer,** nouveau venu, *m.*
**New Orleans,** la Nouvelle-Orléans.
**news,** nouvelle, *f.*, nouvelles, *f. pl.*
**newspaper,** journal, *m.*
**New-Year's day,** jour (*m.*) de l'an.
**next,** *adj.*, prochain; **the — day,** le lendemain, *m.*
**next,** *adv.*, ensuite, après.
**niece,** nièce, *f.*
**night,** nuit, *f.*; **last —,** hier (au) soir, cette nuit, *f.*; **at —,** le soir, la nuit.
**nine,** neuf.
**ninety,** quatre-vingt-dix.
**ninth,** neuvième; neuf.
ion; ne . . . pas; aucun; **— longer,**
re, ne . . . plus; **— one,** ne . . .

**nobleman,** gentilhomme, *m.*
**nobly,** noblement.
**nobody,** (ne . . . ) personne.
**noise,** bruit, *m.*
**noisy,** bruyant.
**none,** pas; nul; aucun.
**noon,** midi, *m.*
**nor,** ni; **neither . . . nor,** (ne . . . ) ni [. . . ni.
**north,** nord, *m.*; du nord; **— wind,** vent (*m.*) du nord.
**North America,** l'Amérique (*f.*) du Nord.
**northern,** du nord.
**northward,** vers le Nord.
**not,** ne . . . pas (point); pas.
**note,** noter.
**nothing,** rien, *m.*; ne . . . rien; (*before an adj. or a part.*) rien de; **— but,** rien . . . que, ne . . . que; **to have — to do with it,** n'y être pour rien.
**notice,** remarquer, observer, noter.
**novel,** roman, *m.*
**now,** *adv.*, maintenant, à présent; **just —,** tout à l'heure; **— . . . —,** tantôt . . . tantôt.
**now,** *conj.*, or.
**nowadays,** aujourd'hui.
**number,** nombre, *m.*; numéro, *m.*
**numeral,** numéral.
**numerous,** nombreux.

## O

**oak,** chêne, *m.*, bois de chêne, *m.*
**obey,** obéir (à).
**object,** objet, *m.*
**oblige,** obliger.
**obligingly,** complaisamment; obligeamment.
**observation,** observation, *f.*
**observe,** observer.
**obtain,** obtenir.
**occasion,** *v.*, donner lieu (à), causer.
**occasion,** *n.*, occasion, *f.*
**occupation,** occupation, *f.*
**occur, it never occurred to me that,** l'idée ne m'est jamais venue que.
**o'clock,** heure, *f.*; **six — train,** train (*m.*) de six heures.
**odor,** odeur, *f.*
**of,** de; parmi; **— it,** en; **— them,** en; y.
**off, lead —,** emmener.
**offer,** offrir.
**officer,** officier, *m.*
**often (—times),** souvent.

**oh!**, oh!; ah!; tiens!
**oil**, huile, *f*.
**old**, vieux; âgé; ancien; **— age**, vieillesse, *f*.; **grow —**, vieillir, se faire vieux.
**omnibus**, omnibus, *m*.
**on**, sur; à; de.
**once**, une fois; **at —**, tout de suite.
**one**, *pron*., on; **no —**, (ne ...) personne; **the —**, celui, *m*., celle, *f*.
**one**, un, *m*., une, *f*.
**oneself**, se; soi; soi-même.
**only**, *adj*., seul; unique.
**only**, *adv*., ne ... que, seulement; **not —**, non seulement.
**open**, *v*., ouvrir; **— wide**, écarquiller.
**open**, *adj*., ouvert; (*of the sea*) plein.
**opening**, ouverture, *f*.
**opinion**, opinion, *f*.; avis, *m*., sentiment, *m*.
**opportunity**, occasion, *f*.
**oppose**, s'opposer (à); résister (à).
**opposite**, vis-à-vis (de); en face (de).
**opposition**, opposition, *f*.
**or**, ou.
**orange**, orange, *f*.
**orchard**, verger, *m*.
**order**, *v*., ordonner.
**order**, *n*., ordre, *m*.; **in — to**, pour, afin de; **in — that**, pour que, afin que.
**ordinal**, ordinal.
**orphan**, orphelin, *m*., —e, *f*.
**other**, autre; **—s**, les autres; d'autres; autrui; **each —**, nous, vous, se; l'un, l'autre; **every — day**, tous les deux jours.
**otherwise**, autrement.
**ought**, devoir.
**our**, notre, nos.
**ours**, le nôtre.
**ourselves**, nous, nous-mêmes.
**out, come —, go —**, sortir; **be —**, être sorti; (*of stove*) être éteint; **one — of ten**, un sur dix; **— of breath**, essoufflé, haletant.
**outcome**, résultat, *m*., conséquence, *f*.
**outside**, dehors; **— of**, hors de.
**outstretch**, éteindre.
**over**, sur; à; **be all — with**, en être fait de; **— there**, là-bas; (*from one side down to the other*) par-dessus; (*at top of*) au dessus de.
**overpower**, accabler.
**overtake**, atteindre, rejoindre.
**owe**, devoir.
**own**, propre; **his —**, le sien.

P

**pace**, pas, *m*.; train, *m*.
**pacify**, pacifier; radoucir.
**page**, page, *f*.
**pain**, mal, *m*., douleur, *f*.
**painful**, douloureux.
**painter**, peintre, *m*.
**pair**, paire, *f*.
**pale**, pâle.
**pallet**, grabat, *m*.
**pallor**, paleur, *f*.
**paper**, papier, *m*.; journal, *m*.
**pardon**, *v*., pardonner.
**pardon**, *n*., pardon, *m*.
**parents**, parents, *m. pl*.
**park**, parc, *m*.
**part**, partie, *f*.; parti, *m*.; côté, *m*.; (*theater*) rôle, *m*.; **for my —**, pour ma part, pour moi.
**pass**, passer.
**passer-by**, passant, *m*.
**passion**, passion, *f*.
**passport**, passe-port, *m*.
**past**, passé; dernier; **half — twelve** (*noon*), midi et demie; **it is ten minutes — two**, il est deux heures dix (minutes); **it is — ten o'clock**, il est dix heures passées.
**patience**, patience, *f*.
**patient**, malade, *m. and f*.
**pay**, payer; **— attention to**, faire attention à; **—** (*a compliment*), faire.
**peace**, paix, *f*.
**pear**, poire, *f*.
**peasant**, *n*., paysan, *m*.
**peasant**, *adj*., **— like**, de paysan.
**pebble**, caillou, *m*.
**peculiar**, particulier; spécial; bizarre; singulier.
**pen**, plume, *f*.
**penalty**, peine, *f*.
**pencil**, crayon, *m*.
**pen-knife**, canif, *m*.
**penny, a pretty —**, les yeux de la tête.
**people**, on; gens, *m. and f*.; personnes, *f. pl*.; **common —**, petites gens, *f. pl*.
**pepper**, poivre, *m*.
**per cent**, pour cent.
**perfect**, parfait; complet.
**perfectly**, parfaitement.
**perform** (*a play*), jouer, représenter, donner.
**performance** (*theater*), représentation, *f*.
**perhaps**, peut-être.

**perish,** périr.
**permission,** permission, *f.*
**permit,** permettre; souffrir.
**person,** personne, *f.*
**personage,** personnage, *m.*
**persuade,** persuader.
**perturbed,** troublé.
**Peter, Saint —,** St.-Pierre.
**Philadelphia,** Philadelphie, *f.*
**philosophy,** philosophie, *f.*
**physical,** du corps.
**physician,** médecin, *m.*, docteur, *m.*
**piano,** piano, *m.*
**picture,** tableau, *m.*
**picturesque,** pittoresque.
**piece,** pièce, *f.*; morceau, *m.*; **— of advice,** conseil, *m.*; **— of furniture,** meuble, *m.*; **— of information,** renseignement, *m.*
**pile up,** empiler.
**pity,** *v.*, plaindre; avoir pitié de.
**pity,** *n.*, pitié, *f.*; **it is a —,** c'est dommage; **excite —,** apitoyer.
**place,** *v.*, placer; mettre; poser.
**place,** *n.*, lieu, *m.*; place, *f.*; endroit, *m.*; **take —,** avoir lieu, se passer.
**plan,** plan, *m.*
**plant,** plante, *f.*
**plate,** assiette, *f.*
**play,** *v.*, jouer; (*of games*) jouer à; (*of instruments*) jouer de; (*a rôle*) jouer, remplir.
**play,** *n.*, spectacle, *m.*
**playfully,** avec enjouement.
**playing,** jeu, *m.*
**pleasant,** agréable.
**please,** plaire (à); vouloir; **if you —,** s'il vous plaît; **be —d,** être content (de); être heureux (de).
**pleasure,** plaisir, *m.*; **with —,** avec plaisir; je le veux bien.
**plenty,** beaucoup; bien assez; abondamment.
**plight,** état, *m.*, condition, *f.*
**ploughman,** laboureur, *m.*
**poem,** poème, *m.*
**poet,** poète, *m.*
**poetry,** poésie, *f.*
**point,** pointe, *f.*
**poison,** poison, *f.*
**Poland,** Pologne, *f.*
**police,** police, *f.*
**Polish,** de Pologne.
**polished,** poli.
**polite,** poli.
**politician,** politique, *m.*
**polytechnic,** polytechnique.
**Pompeii,** Pompéi, *f.*
**poor,** pauvre.
**pope,** pape, *m.*
**porter,** concièrge, *m.*, portier,
**position, in a — to,** en état de.
**possession,** possession, *f.*
**possible,** possible.
**postage-stamp,** timbre-poste, *m.*
**posted, be —,** être au courant de.
**postman,** facteur, *m.*
**post-office,** bureau (*m.*) de poste, poste, *f.*
**postpone,** remettre, différer.
**pound,** livre, *f.*
**poverty,** pauvreté, *f.*, misère, *f.*
**power,** pouvoir, *m.*
**praise,** louer.
**prayer,** prière, *f.*
**precaution,** précaution, *f.*
**preceptor,** précepteur, *m.*
**precious,** précieux.
**prediction,** prédiction, *f.*
**prefect,** préfet, *m.*
**prefer,** préférer; aimer mieux.
**preferable,** préférable.
**prejudiced,** prévenu.
**prepare,** préparer; s'apprêter (à).
**presence,** présence, *f.*; **in my —,** en ma présence, devant moi.
**present,** *v.*, présenter; **— oneself (appear),** se présenter.
**present,** *n.*, présent, *m.*
**present,** *adj.*, présent; **at —,** à présent; **for the —,** pour le moment; quant au présent.
**presently,** tout à l'heure.
**preserve,** conserver; garder.
**pretend,** feindre; affecter; faire mine de; prétendre (à); **— to be ill,** faire le malade.
**pretext,** prétexte, *m.*
**pretty,** joli; **a — penny,** les yeux de la tête.
**prevent,** empêcher.
**previous,** antérieur.
**price,** prix, *m.*
**pride,** fierté, *f.*
**priest,** prêtre, *m.*
**prince,** prince, *m.*
**principal,** principal.
**principle,** principe, *m.*
**prison,** prison, *f.*
**prisoner,** prisonnier, *m.*
**private,** particulier.

**privation,** privation, *f.*
**probable,** probable.
**probably,** probablement.
**profess,** professer.
**profession,** profession, *f.*
**professor,** professeur, *m.*
**profit,** profiter.
**profound,** profond.
**project,** projet, *m.*
**projection,** projection, *f.*
**promise,** *v.*, promettre.
**promise,** *n.*, promesse, *f.*
**pronounce,** prononcer.
**proof,** preuve, *f.*
**property,** bien, *m.*, biens, *m. pl.*
**propose,** proposer.
**proposition,** proposition, *f.*
**proprietor,** propriétaire, *m.*
**prosper,** prospérer.
**protect,** protéger.
**protection,** protection, *f.*
**protest,** protester, se récrier.
**proud,** fier.
**prove,** prouver.
**proverb,** proverbe, *m.*
**provided,** pourvu que.
**province,** province, *f.*
**provision,** provision, *f.*
**public,** *n.*, public, *m.*
**public,** *adj.*, public.
**publish,** publier.
**pull,** tirer; **— out,** arracher (de), retirer (de).
**punish,** punir.
**punishment,** punition, *f.*
**pupil,** élève, *m. and f.*
**pure,** pure.
**purpose, on —,** (tout) exprès.
**put,** mettre; — (*faith in*), ajouter; **be — out,** être troublé; **— away,** ranger; **— up** (=*lodge*), descendre; **— to death,** faire périr; **— out of,** mettre hors de.
**puzzle,** intriguer.

Q

**quality,** qualité, *f.*
**quantity,** quantité, *f.*; provision, *f.*
**quarrel,** *v.*, **— with,** se quereller avec, se brouiller avec.
**quarrel,** *n.*, querelle, *f.*
**quarter,** quart, *m.*
**queen,** reine, *f.*
**question,** *v.*, interroger.
**question,** *n.*, question, *f.*
**quickly,** vite, vivement.
**quiet,** tranquille; **be (keep) —,** être (rester, se tenir) tranquille, se taire.
**quietly,** sans bruit.
**quite,** tout à fait, tout.

R

**rage,** rage, *f.*
**ragged,** déguenillé.
**rail, —road,** chemin de fer, *m.*; **by —,** en chemin de fer.
**rain,** *v.*, pleuvoir.
**rain,** *n.*, pluie, *f.*
**raise,** lever.
**random, at —,** à l'aventure.
**rank,** rang, *m.*
**rapid,** rapide.
**rarely,** rarement.
**rate, at any —,** en tout cas.
**rather,** plutôt.
**reach,** atteindre; parvenir (à); arriver (à).
**read,** lire
**reading,** lecture, *f.*
**ready,** prêt (à); **dinner is —,** le dîner est servi; **get —,** se préparer; se disposer.
**real,** réel, vrai.
**reality,** réalité, *f.*; **in —,** en réalité, au fond.
**realize,** se rendre compte (de).
**really,** réellement, en effet, en vérité, véritablement, vraiment.
**reason,** raison, *f.*; **there is no — for it,** il n'y a pas de quoi.
**reassure,** rassurer.
**rebel,** se révolter.
**receive,** recevoir.
**recognize,** reconnaître.
**recommendation,** recommendation, *f.*
**reconcile,** réconcilier; **become —d to** (*a thing*), s'habituer (à); se faire (à), se résigner (à).
**red,** roux (rousse, *f.*).
**reflect,** réfléchir.
**reflection,** réflexion, *f.*
**refuge, take —,** se réfugier.
**refuse,** refuser.
**regret,** regretter.
**reign,** règne, *m.*
**relate,** raconter.
**relation,** relation, *f.*, rapport, *m.*



**relationship,** parenté, *f.*
**release,** délivrer (de).
**relieve,** alléger (de).
**religion,** religion, *f.*
**remain,** rester.
**remark,** remarquer.
**remedy,** remède, *m.*
**remember,** se souvenir de; se rappeler; retenir; **— me (kindly) to,** rappelez-moi au bon souvenir de; dites bien des choses de ma part **à.**
**render,** rendre.
**repair,** réparer.
**repast,** repas, *m.*
**repeat,** répéter.
**repent,** se repentir.
**reply,** répondre.
**report** (*rumor*), bruit, *m.*
**represent,** représenter.
**reproach,** reproche, *m.*
**repugnance,** répugnance, *f.*
**repulsion,** répulsion, *f.*
**reputation,** réputation, *f.*
**request,** *v.*, prier.
**request,** *n.*, demande, *f.*
**resemble,** ressembler (à).
**resign, — oneself,** se résigner; prendre son parti.
**resignation,** résignation, *f.*
**resigned,** résigné.
**resist,** résister (à).
**resolution,** résolution, *f.*
**resolve,** résoudre; décider.
**resource,** ressource, *f.*
**respect,** *v.*, respecter.
**respect,** *n.*, respect, *m.*
**respectful,** respectueux.
**respectfully,** respectueusement.
**respond,** répondre (à).
**rest,** se reposer; **— easy,** se tenir tranquille.
**restraint,** contrainte, *f.*
**result,** *v.*, résulter.
**result,** *n.*, résultat, *m.*
**resume,** reprendre.
**retire,** se retirer.
**return,** *v.*, (*come back*) revenir; (*go back*) retourner; (*indoors*) rentrer; (*repay*) rendre.
**return,** *n.*, retour, *m.*
**reward,** *v.*, récompenser.
**reward,** *n.*, gratification, *f.*
**rich,** riche; **become —,** s'enrichir; **— man,** richard, *m.*
**riches,** richesse, *f.*
**rickety** (*of furniture*), boiteux.
**rid (oneself of),** (se) débarrasser (de), (se) défaire (de).
**riddance,** débarras, *m.*
**ride,** promenade, *f.*; **— on horseback,** promenade à cheval.
**ridiculous,** ridicule.
**right,** *n.*, droit, *m.*
**right,** *adj.*, *adv.*, juste, droit; bien; **to the —,** à droite; **be —,** avoir raison.
**ring,** sonner.
**ripe,** mûr.
**rise,** se lever.
**risk,** risquer; **run the — of,** courir risque de.
**river,** rivière, *f.*; (*great* —) fleuve, *m.*
**road,** route, *f.*; chemin, *m.*
**roar** (*of fire*), ronfler.
**rogue,** coquin, *m.*, drôle, *m.*
**rôle,** rôle, *m.*
**roll,** rouler; **— up,** rouler.
**Roman,** romain.
**Rome,** Rome, *f.*
**room,** chambre, *f.*
**rose,** rose, *f.*
**rotten,** pourri.
**rough,** rude; dur.
**round,** rond.
**route,** route, *f.*
**ruby,** rubis, *m.*
**ruin,** *v.*, ruiner.
**ruin,** *n.*, ruine, *f.*
**rule,** règle, *f.*
**ruling,** dominant.
**run,** courir; **— the risk of,** courir risque de.
**Russia,** Russie, *f.*

## S

**sacrifice,** sacrifier.
**sad,** triste.
**sadness,** tristesse, *f.*
**safe, — and sound,** sain et sauf.
**sail, set —,** mettre à la voile.
**sailor,** marin, *m.*; matelot, *m.*
**Saint Honoré,** Saint-Honoré.
**sake, for the — of,** à cause de; par mesure de.
**salad,** salade, *f.*
**salon,** salon, *m.*
**salt,** *v.*, saler.
**salt,** *n.*, sel, *m.*

**same,** même; **in the — way,** de la même manière; **at the — time,** à la fois; **all the —,** tout de même.
**satisfactory,** satisfaisant; **that is not —,** cela laisse à désirer.
**satisfied,** content (de); satisfait (de).
**satisfy,** contenter.
**Saturday,** samedi, *m.*
**save,** sauver.
**say,** dire.
**scaffold,** échaffaud, *m.*
**scarcely,** à peine; presque pas; (ne . . .) presque; (ne . . .) guère.
**scene,** scène, *f.*
**scenery,** paysage, *m.*
**school,** école, *f.*
**science,** science, *f.*
**scorn,** mépris, *m.*
**sea,** mer, *f.*
**search,** recherche, *f.*
**season,** saison, *f.*
**seat,** siège, *m.*; place, *f.*; **take a —,** s'asseoir, prendre place.
**seated,** assis; **pray be —,** veuillez vous asseoir.
**second,** second; deuxième; deux.
**secret,** secret, *m.*
**see,** voir; s'apercevoir; apercevoir; **— to it,** avoir soin de.
**seek,** chercher.
**seem,** sembler, paraître.
**seldom,** rarement.
**sell,** *v. tr.*, vendre; *v. intr.*, se vendre.
**semester,** semestre, *m.*
**senate,** sénat, *m.*
**send,** envoyer; **— back,** renvoyer; **— for,** envoyer chercher; faire venir.
**Senegal,** Sénégal, *m.*
**sense,** sens, *m.*
**sentence,** phrase, *f.*
**sentiment,** sentiment, *m.*
**sentinel,** sentinelle, *f.*
**separate,** séparer; se disjoindre.
**serf,** serf, *m.*
**serious,** sérieux, grave.
**seriously,** sérieusement.
**servant,** domestique, *m. and f.*; servante, *f.*
**serve,** servir.
**service,** service, *m.*; **be of —,** servir; **of — to,** utile à.
**set,** mettre; (*of the sun*) se coucher; **— foot in it again,** y remettre les pieds; **— sail,** mettre à la voile; **— about it,** s'y prendre; **— in order,** ranger; **— out,** partir; **— free,** délivrer.
**set on,** décidé à.
**settle, — up,** régler son compte.
**settled,** fixé; établi; tranquille.
**settlement,** établissement, *m.*
**seven,** sept.
**seventeen,** dix-sept.
**seventeenth,** dix-septième; dix-sept.
**several,** plusieurs; divers.
**severe,** sévère.
**shake,** branler, secouer; **— hands with,** serrer (donner) la main à.
**shame,** 'honte, *f.*
**shameful,** 'honteux.
**share,** portion, *f.*; part, *f.*
**sharply,** vivement.
**she,** elle.
**shed,** verser.
**sheet, three —s in the wind,** entre deux [vins.
**shelter,** abri, *m.*; refuge, *m.*; protection, *f.*
**shilling,** shilling, *m.*
**ship,** vaisseau, *m.*
**shipwreck,** naufrage, *m.*
**shock,** coup, *m.*
**shoe,** soulier, *m.*
**shop,** boutique, *f.*
**short,** court; (*adv.*) tout net; **in —,** en somme; enfin; bref.
**shortly, — afterwards,** peu après.
**should,** devoir.
**shoulder,** épaule, *f.*
**show,** montrer; témoigner; faire voir; **— upstairs,** faire monter; **— in,** introduire.
**shut,** fermer.
**sick,** *n. and adj.*, malade.
**side,** côté, *m.*; parti, *m.*; **— by —,** à côté l'un(e) de l'autre.
**sight,** vue, *f.*
**silence,** silence, *f.*
**silent, be —,** se taire.
**silk,** *n.*, soie, *f.*
**silk,** *adj.*, de soie.
**silly,** niais; sot; bête.
**simple,** simple.
**since,** *prep.*, depuis.
**since,** *conj.*, *adv.*, depuis que; puisque; que; **it is two months — I saw him,** il y a deux mois que je ne l'ai vu.
**sing,** chanter.
**sink** (*of a ship*), couler bas.
**sir,** monsieur, *m.*
**sire,** sire, *m.*

**sister,** sœur, *f.*
**sit, — down,** s'asseoir; être assis.
**sitting,** assis.
**situation,** situation, *f.*; état, *m.*
**six,** six.
**sixteen,** seize.
**sixteenth,** seizième, seize.
**Sixtus, — V,** Sixte-Quint.
**sixty,** soixante.
**skate,** patiner.
**skillful,** habile.
**skirt,** jupe, *f.*
**slave,** esclave, *m. and f.*
**sleep,** *v.*, coucher; dormir; (*nap*) sommeiller.
**sleep,** *n.*, sommeil, *m.*
**sleepy, be —,** avoir sommeil.
**sleigh,** traîneau, *m.*; **to go —ing,** (aller) se promener en traîneau, faire une promenade en traîneau.
**slender,** mince.
**slight,** léger; (*small*) petit; mince.
**slip,** glisser.
**slippery,** glissant.
**slowly,** lentement.
**small,** petit; menu.
**smell,** *v.*, sentir; **— sweet,** sentir bon.
**smell,** *n.*, odeur, *f.*
**smile,** *v.*, sourire.
**smile,** *n.*, sourire, *m.*
**smoke,** fumer.
**sneering,** ricaneur.
**snow,** *v.*, neiger.
**snow,** *n.*, neige, *f.*
**snowdrop,** perce-neige, *f.*
**so,** si; ainsi; aussi; par conséquent; c'est pourquoi; **— much,** tant; **— many,** tant; **—that,** afin que, de sorte que, de manière que; **— well,** si bien, tant; **— just,** donc; (*=it, used for an adjective or anything mentioned before*) le, l', en.
**sob,** sangloter.
**society,** société, *f.*; monde, *m.*; **to go into —,** aller dans le monde.
**Socrates,** Socrate.
**sofa,** sofa, *m.*, canapé, *m.*
**soften,** adoucir.
**soldier,** soldat, *m.*
**some,** *adj.*, de + *def. art.*; quelque(s); un; **— . . . or other,** quelconque.
**some,** *pron.*, en; quelqu'un, quelques-uns (*pl.*); **— one,** quelqu'un, on.
**something,** quelque chose; **— (or other),** *je ne sais quoi.*
**sometimes,** quelquefois.
**somewhat,** un peu.
**somewhere,** quelque part.
**son,** fils, *m.*
**soon,** tôt, bientôt; **as — as,** dès que, aussitôt que; **— (*early*),** tôt.
**sooner,** plus tôt.
**sorry,** fâché; triste; **be —,** regretter; être fâché.
**sort,** sort, *m.*; **nothing of the —,** rien de semblable, rien de tout cela; **do nothing of the —,** guardez-vous-en bien.
**soul,** âme, *f.*
**sound,** ferme; (*of sleep*) profond; **— asleep,** qui dormait profondément; **safe and —,** sain et sauf.
**soup,** soupe, *f.*
**south,** sud, *m.*, midi, *m.*; du sud; **— wind,** vent du sud.
**southern,** méridional.
**space,** éspace, *m.*
**spade,** bêche, *f.*
**Spain,** Espagne, *f.*
**Spanish,** espagnol.
**speak,** parler; (*say*) dire; (*pronounce*) prononcer; **— ill of,** dire du mal de; médire de.
**spectacle,** spectacle, *m.*
**spectacles,** lunettes, *f. pl.*
**spectator,** spectateur, *m.*; curieux, *m.*
**speculation,** spéculation, *f.*
**speech,** 'harangue, *f.*
**spend,** (*time*) passer; vivre; (*money*) dépenser.
**spendthrift,** dépensier, *m.*, prodigue, *m. and f.*
**spin,** filer.
**spite,** dépit, *m.*; **in — of,** en dépit de, malgré.
**spiteful,** 'haineux.
**split,** fendre.
**spread,** étendre; (*publish*) répandre.
**spring, — (forward),** s'élancer; **— up** (*fig.*), germer.
**springtime,** printemps, *m.*
**stab,** frapper.
**stable,** écurie, *f.*
**stage** (*of a theater*), scène, *f.*
**stair,** escalier, *m.*; **fall down —s,** rouler en bas de l'escalier; **down —s,** en bas.
**stake, be at —,** y aller de; s'agir de.
**stammer,** balbutier.
**stand,** être debout.

**standing,** debout.
**star,** étoile, *f.*
**start,** partir.
**state,** état, *m.*
**statesman,** homme (*m.*) d'état.
**statue,** statue, *f.*
**stay,** rester.
**stead,** lieu, *m.*; place, *f.*; **in — of,** au lieu de.
**steadily,** fixement.
**steal,** voler.
**step,** *v.*, marcher; **— into** (*a carriage*), monter dans.
**step,** *n.*, pas, *m.*
**still,** *adj.*, tranquille; **be —,** rester (se tenir) tranquille.
**still,** *adv.*, encore; toujours; pourtant; cependant.
**stir,** remuer; (*budge*) bouger; **— about,** se remuer.
**stocking,** bas, *m.*
**stone,** *adj.*, de pierre.
**stone,** *n.*, pierre, *f.*; **— breaker,** casseur (*m.*) de pierres.
**stool,** escabeau, *m.*
**stoop, — down,** se baisser.
**stop,** arrêter; cesser; s'arrêter; **— in,** passer chez.
**store, set — by,** faire cas de.
**story,** histoire, *f.*; étage, *m.*; **in the first —,** au premier.
**stout,** gros.
**stove,** poêle, *m.*
**straight,** droit.
**straighten, — up,** se redresser.
**strain,** s'efforcer.
**strange,** étrange.
**strangely,** singulièrement; étrangement.
**strangle,** étrangler.
**stratagem,** ruse, *f.*
**straw,** paille, *f.*; **— hat,** chapeau (*m.*) de paille.
**street,** rue, *f.*
**strength,** force, *f.*
**stride,** enjamber; **— (up and down),** arpenter.
**strike,** frapper; saisir; (*of a clock*) sonner.
**stroke,** coup, *m.*
**strong,** fort.
**strongly,** fortement.
**struggle,** se débattre.
**student,** étudiant, —e, *m. and f.*
**stud,** (= *strew*) parsemer (de).
**study,** *v.*, étudier.
**study,** *n.*, étude, *f.*; travail, *m.*; (*room*) cabinet (de travail), *m.*
**stupefaction,** stupéfaction, *f.*
**stupid,** stupide; bête.
**style,** style, *m.*; train, *m.*
**subject,** sujet, *m.*
**submit, — to it,** en passer par là.
**subscribe,** souscrire.
**subtlety,** finesse, *f.*
**subsistence, means of —,** gagne-pain, *m.*
**succeed,** réussir; (*follow*) suivre, succéder; **— in,** venir à bout de.
**success,** succès, *m.*; réussite, *f.*
**such,** tel; **— a one,** un tel; **in — a hurry,** tellement pressé; **in — weather,** d'un temps pareil, par un temps comme celui-ci; **— and —,** tel et tel.
**sudden,** soudain, subit.
**suddenly,** subitement, soudainement; brusquement.
**suffer,** souffrir; **— the penalty,** porter la peine.
**sufficient, be —,** se suffire.
**sufficiently,** suffisament.
**sugar,** sucre, *m.*
**suit,** convenir, aller à.
**suitable,** convenable.
**suitably,** convenablement.
**sum,** somme, *f.*
**summer,** été, *m.*
**summon,** appeler; faire venir.
**sumptuous,** somptueux.
**sun,** soleil, *m.*
**Sunday,** dimanche, *m.*
**sunrise,** lever du soleil, *m.*
**sunset,** coucher (*m.*) du soleil.
**superb,** superbe.
**superfluous,** superflu.
**superior,** supérieur, *m.*
**superstitious,** superstitieux.
**supple,** souple.
**supplication,** supplication, *f.*
**suppose,** supposer.
**sure,** sûr; **make —,** s'assurer.
**surely,** bien sûr; à coup sûr; bien.
**surgeon,** chirurgien, *m.*
**surprise,** *v.*, surprendre.
**surprise,** *n.*, surprise, *f.*
**surround,** environner, entourer.
**surrounding,** environnant.
**suspect,** se douter de (que).
**suspicion,** soupçon, *m.*; défiance, *f.*
**swear,** jurer.
**sweet,** doux; bon; **smell —,** sentir bon.
**swim,** nager.
**Switzerland,** Suisse, *f.*

**syllable**, syllabe, *f.*
**sympathize**, sympathiser (avec).
**system**, système, *m.*

## T

**table**, table, *f.*
**tack**, louvoyer.
**tailor**, tailleur, *m.*
**take**, prendre; (*a trip, voyage*) faire; (*conduct*) conduire; — **aback**, interdire; — **along**, emmener; — **an examination**, subir (passer) un examen; — **away**, emmener, ôter, enlever; — **care of oneself**, se soigner; — **place**, se passer; avoir lieu; — **up**, prendre; **how long does it — to**, combien de temps faut-il pour; — **to heart**, prendre à cœur.
**tale**, récit, *m.*
**talent**, talent, *m.*
**talk**, parler.
**tall**, grand.
**tangled**, emmêlé.
**task**, tâche, *f.*; devoir, *m.*
**tattered**, déchiré.
**tea**, thé, *m.*
**teach**, apprendre; enseigner.
**teacher**, maître, *m.*
**tear**, *v.*, déchirer.
**tear**, *n.*, larme, *f.*
**tell**, dire; apprendre; raconter; connaître.
**ten**, dix.
**tenacious**, tenace.
**tennis**, tennis, *m.*
**tenth**, dixième, *m.*
**term**, terme, *m.*; **be on good —s**, être bien ensemble.
**terrible**, terrible.
**than**, que; de.
**thank**, remercier; (**no**) — **you**, (non) merci; — **you very much**, merci bien; grand merci.
**thankful**, reconnaissant (de); **be — for**, savoir gré de.
**thanks**, remerciements, *m. pl.*; — **to**, grâce à.
**that**, *dem. pron. or adj.*, ce, cela, celui, ce, cet, cette, ces; ce . . . là; — **is**, voilà, voici.
**that**, *rel. pron.*, qui, que, lequel.
**that**, *conj.*, que.
[illegible] chaumière, *f.*

**theater**, théâtre, *m.*
**their**, leur.
**theirs**, le leur.
**them**, eux, elles; les; à eux, à elles; leur; ceux, celles; **of —**, en; d'eux, d'elles.
**theme**, thème, *m.*; devoir, *m.*
**themselves**, eux, elles; eux-mêmes, elles-mêmes; se.
**then**, donc (= *so, therefore*); alors (= *at that time, so*); ensuite (= *next*); puis (= *after that*).
**there**, là, y; — **is** (**are**), voilà; il y a; — **he is**, le voilà; **over —**, là-bas.
**therefore**, c'est pourquoi; donc, ainsi.
**they**, ils, elles; eux, elles; ceux, celles; ce; on.
**thief**, voleur, *m.*
**thing**, chose, *f.*
**think**, penser; croire; trouver; **I don't know what to — of it**, je ne sais à quoi m'en tenir.
**third**, troisième; trois.
**thirsty, be —**, avoir soif.
**thirty-five**, trente-cinq.
**this**, *adj.*, ce, cet, cette; ce . . . ci.
**this**, *pron.*, ce, ceci; celui-ci; — **one**, celui-ci.
**thorn**, épine, *f.*
**thoroughly**, à fond.
**those**, *adj.*, ces; ces . . . là.
**those**, *pron.*, ceux, celles; ceux-là, celles-là.
**though**, quoique, bien que; **as —**, comme si; **even —**, quand.
**thought**, pensée, *f.*
**thoughtlessly**, étourdiment.
**thousand**, mille, mil.
**threaten**, menacer.
**three**, trois.
**threshold**, seuil, *m.*
**throat**, gorge, *f.*
**throng**, foule, *f.*
**through**, par; à travers; au travers de.
**throw**, jeter.
**thunderbolt**, coup (*m.*) de foudre.
**Thursday**, jeudi, *m.*
**thus**, ainsi.
**tie**, *v.*, (— **up**), nouer; renouer.
**tie**, *n.*, cravatte, *f.*
**till**, à; jusqu'à.
**time**, temps, *m.*; fois, *f.*; (*o'clock*) heure, *f.*; **have a good —**, s'amuser (bien); **a long —**, longtemps; **at the same —**, à la fois; **up to that —**,

jusque là; **in the mean —**, pendant ce temps-là; **from — to —**, de temps en temps; **in —**, à temps.
**timid**, timide.
**tip**, pourboire, *m*.
**tire**, fatiguer.
**tit for tat**, un prêté rendu; à bon chat bon rat.
**tithe**, dîme, *f*.
**to**, à; pour; de; chez; auprès de; en.
**to-day**, aujourd'hui.
**together**, ensemble.
**tolerance**, tolérance, *f*.
**to-morrow**, demain.
**tone**, accent, *m*.; ton, *m*.
**tongue, hold one's —**, se taire.
**to-night**, cette nuit, *f*.; ce soir, *m*.
**too**, trop; aussi; **— much**, trop.
**tooth**, dent, *f*.
**torment**, *v*., tourmenter.
**torment**, *n*., tourment, *m*.
**torrent**, torrent, *m*.; **in —s**, à torrents.
**touch**, toucher; émouvoir.
**touching**, émouvant.
**Touraine**, Touraine, *f*.
**tourist**, touriste, *m*.
**toward, -s**, vers; du côté de.
**town**, ville, *f*.; **in —**, en ville.
**toy**, jouet, *m*.
**trade**, commerce, *m*.
**tragedienne**, tragédienne, *f*.
**tragedy**, tragédie, *f*.
**train**, train, *m*.
**tramp**, vagabond, *m*.
**tranquillity**, tranquillité, *f*.
**transparent**, transparent.
**trap**, piège, *f*.
**travel**, voyager.
**traveler**, voyageur, *m*.
**treasure**, trésor, *m*.
**treat**, traîter; en user avec.
**tree**, arbre, *m*.
**tremble**, trembler.
**trick**, tour, *m*.
**trip**, voyage, *m*.; tour, *m*.; excursion, *f*.
**triumphantly**, triomphalement.
**troop**, troupe, *f*.
**trouble**, (*disturbance*) trouble, *m*.; (*uneasiness*) inquiétude, *f*.; tourment, *m*.; (*annoyance*) ennui, *m*.; (*affliction*) peine, *f*., chagrin, *m*.
**troublesome**, gênant.
**true**, vrai; véritable.
**truly**, vraiment.
**trunk**, tronc, *m*.; malle, *f*., coffre, *m*.
**trust, — in**, se confier à.
**trustworthy**, de bonne foi.
**truth**, vérité, *f*.; vrai, *m*.
**try**, essayer; tâcher.
**tub**, tonneau, *m*.
**Tuesday**, mardi, *m*.
**tunic**, tunique, *f*.
**turbot**, turbot, *m*.
**turn**, *v*., (se) tourner, (se) retourner; **— back**, retourner; **— around**, (se) retourner; **— hay**, faner.
**turn**, *n*., tour, *m*.; **in —**, tour à tour.
**twelve**, douze.
**twenty**, vingt.
**twenty-first**, vingt et unième; vingt et un.
**twenty-five**, vingt-cinq.
**twenty-six**, vingt-six.
**twenty-sixth**, vingt-sizième; vingt-six.
**twice**, deux fois.
**two**, deux.

U

**ugly**, laid.
**unbearable**, insupportable.
**umbrella**, parapluie, *m*.
**uncle**, oncle, *m*.
**uncoil**, (se) dérouler.
**uncork**, déboucher.
**under**, sous.
**undergo**, subir; endurer.
**understand**, comprendre; entendre; se connaître en; **that is —stood**, cela s'entend, cela va sans dire.
**undertake**, entreprendre.
**undertaking**, entreprise, *f*.
**undeserved**, immérité; injuste.
**undress**, (se) déshabiller.
**uneasy**, inquiet; agité; **make —**, inquiéter.
**unfavorable**, défavorable.
**unforeseen**, imprévu.
**unfortunate**, malheureux.
**unfortunately**, malheureusement.
**unfurl**, déployer.
**unhappy**, malheureux.
**unintended**, involontaire.
**union**, union, *f*.
**united**, uni; réuni.
**United States**, États-Unis, *m. pl.*
**universal**, universel.
**university**, université, *f*.
**unjust**, injuste.

**unless,** à moins de; à moins que . . . (ne); si . . . ne . . . pas.
**unlucky,** malheureux; sinistre.
**until,** *prep. or conj.*, jusqu'à; jusque; jusqu'à ce que; (*after a neg.*) avant; (ne) . . . que; que.
**up,** en haut de; sur; **— to that time,** jusque là.
**upon,** sur; de; à.
**upside,** dessus, *m.*; (**turn**) **— down,** (mettre) sens dessus dessous.
**upstairs,** en haut; à l'étage supérieur; **show —,** faire monter.
**urge,** pousser.
**urgent,** urgent; pressant.
**us,** nous.
**use,** *v.*, se servir de; **be —d to,** être accoutumé à; avoir l'habitude de.
**use,** *n.*, usage, *m.*; **it is no —,** avoir beau; **be of no —,** ne servir à rien.
**useful,** utile.
**useless,** inutile.
**usual,** usuel; **as —,** à l'ordinaire; comme d'habitude (de coutume).
**usually,** ordinairement.
**utter** (*a cry*), pousser.

## V

**vain, be in —,** avoir beau; **in —,** vainement; **look in —,** avoir beau regarder.
**valet,** valet, *m.*
**value,** valeur, *f.*
**vanish,** s'évanouir.
**vanquish,** vaincre.
**vary,** varier.
**vassal,** vassal, *m.*
**vast,** vaste; immense.
**vehicle,** voiture, *f.*
**veil,** voile, *m.*
**vender,** vendeur, *m.*, **—euse,** *f.*, marchand, *m.*, —e, *f.*
**venerable,** vénérable.
**vengeance,** vengeance, *f.*
**venture,** hasarder.
**verst,** verste, *m.*
**very,** *adj.*, même.
**very,** *adv.*, très, bien, fort; **— much,** beaucoup, fort; **be — hungry,** avoir grand' faim.
**vex,** fâcher, contrarier.
ice, *m.*
**vigilant,** vigilant.
**vigorous,** vigoureux.
**village,** village, *m.*
**vinegar,** vinaigre, *m.*
**virtue,** vertu, *f.*
**visit,** visiter; faire une visite à; rendre visite à.
**visit,** visite, *f.*
**voice,** voix, *f.*
**volume,** volume, *m.*, tome, *m.*
**voyage,** voyage, *m.*

## W

**wail,** lamenter.
**wait (for),** attendre.
**waiter,** garçon, *m.*
**wake,** éveiller, réveiller; se réveiller.
**walk,** *v.*, marcher; **go —ing,** (aller) se promener, faire une promenade.
**walk,** *n.*, promenade, *f.*; **go for a —, take a —,** (aller) se promener, faire une promenade.
**wall,** mur, *m.*
**waltz,** valse, *f.*
**want,** vouloir; **you are —ed,** on vous demande.
**wanted,** — (*a preceptor*), on demande.
**war,** guerre, *f.*; **make — upon,** faire la guerre à.
**ward off,** parer.
**warm,** *v.*, réchauffer.
**warm,** *adj.*, chaud.
**watch,** *v.*, veiller; épier.
**watch,** *n.*, montre, *f.*
**water,** eau, *f.*
**wave,** agiter.
**way,** route, *f.*; chemin, *m.*; manière, *f.*; **by the —,** de la manière; à propos; **give —,** succomber; céder; **on the — back,** au retour; **in that —,** de la sorte; de cette manière; de façon; ainsi; **in the same —,** de la même manière.
**we,** nous.
**weak,** faible.
**weaken,** affaiblir.
**weakness,** faiblesse, *f.*
**wealth,** richesse, *f.*, fortune, *f.*
**wealthy,** riche.
**wear,** porter, (**— out**) user; **be worn out,** n'en pouvoir plus.
**weather,** temps, *m.*; **it is fine —,** il fait beau (temps); **hot —,** les chaleurs,

*f. pl.*; **in such —,** par un temps pareil, par un temps comme celui-ci.
**wedding,** mariage, *m.*, noces, *f. pl.*
**Wednesday,** mercredi, *m.*
**week,** semaine, *f.*; **a — from to-day,** d'aujourd'hui en huit.
**weep,** pleurer.
**welcome,** (bien) accueillir.
**well,** bien; **— !,** bien! eh bien!; **be —,** se porter bien.
**western,** occidental.
**wet,** mouillé; (*of weather*) pluvieux; **— through,** (tout) trempé.
**what,** *adj.*, quel; **— time,** quelle heure.
**what,** *pron.*, que; quoi; ce qui, ce que; qu'est-ce qui?, qu'est-ce que?; (*int.*) comment! quoi!
**whatever,** tout ce qui, tout ce que; quelque . . . qui, quelque . . . que; quoi que; quel que; qui que.
**when,** quand, lorsque; que; à quelle heure; **hardly** (*scarcely*) **. . . —,** à peine . . . que.
**whence,** d'où.
**whenever,** quand, lorsque; toutes les fois que.
**where,** où; **from —,** d'où.
**whereupon,** sur quoi; là-dessus.
**wherever,** où; quelque part que; partout où; n'importe où.
**whether,** si; que; soit que; **— . . . or,** (soit) que . . . ou (que).
**which,** *adj.*, quel; **— one,** lequel.
**which,** *pron.*, qui, que; lequel; **in —,** où; **of —,** dont.
**while,** *n.*, temps, *m.*; moment, *m.*; **a little — ago,** tout à l'heure; **it is not worth —,** ce n'est pas (ne vaut pas) la peine.
**while,** *conj.*, pendant que; tandis que; (*as long as*) tant que; (*before a present part.*) en, tout en.
**whisper,** chuchotement, *m.*; **say in a —,** dire tout bas.
**whistle,** siffler.
**white,** blanc (blanche, *f.*).
**who,** qui; quel; lequel.
**whoever,** qui que, qui que ce soit, quiconque.
**whole,** tout.
**whom,** que, qui, lequel; **of —,** dont, de qui, duquel.
**whose,** à qui; de qui; dont; duquel.
**why,** pourquoi; mais; donc.
**wicked,** *n. and adj.*, méchant; mauvais.
**wickedness,** méchanceté, *f.*
**wide,** large; **ten feet —,** de dix pieds de large (de largeur), large de dix pieds; **open —,** écarquiller.
**widen,** élargir.
**wife,** femme, *f.*
**wild,** sauvage.
**will,** *v.*, vouloir.
**will,** *n.*, volonté, *f.*
**willful,** volontaire, obstiné.
**William,** Guillaume.
**willing,** (bien) disposé (à); désireux (de); **to be —,** vouloir bien, consentir (à); désireux (de).
**willingly,** de bon gré; volontiers.
**win,** gagner.
**wind,** vent, *m.*
**window,** fenêtre, *f.*; (*of a carriage*) portière, *f.*, glace, *f.*
**windy,** venteux; de (du) vent; **it is —,** il fait du vent.
**wine,** vin, *m.*
**wing,** aile, *f.*
**wink,** clignement (*m.*) d'œil; **not to sleep a —,** ne pas fermer l'œil de toute la nuit.
**winter,** hiver, *m.*
**wise,** sage.
**wisely,** sagement; prudemment.
**wish,** *v.*, désirer; souhaiter; vouloir.
**wish,** *n.*, désir, *m.*; envie, *f.*; souhait, *m.*
**wit,** esprit, *m.*
**with,** avec; de; à.
**withal,** avec (tout) cela.
**withdraw,** se retirer.
**within,** en, dans.
**without,** sans que; sans; **do** (*get along*) **—,** se passer de.
**witness,** témoin, *m.*
**witty,** spirituel.
**wolf,** loup, *m.*
**woman,** femme, *f.*; **French —,** Française, *f.*
**wonder,** *v.*, s'étonner; se demander.
**wonder,** *n.*, étonnement, *m.*; merveille, *f.*
**wonderful,** merveilleux.
**wood,** bois, *m.*
**wooden,** de bois, en bois.
**wool,** laine, *f.*
**word,** mot, *m.*; parole, *f.*; **upon my —,** ma foi.
**work,** *v.*, travailler.
**work,** *n.*, travail, *m.*; ouvrage, *m.*
**workman,** ouvrier, *m.*
**world,** monde, *m.*

**worry,** (se) tourmenter, (se) fatiguer, (se) ennuyer.
**worse,** *adj.*, pire, plus mauvais.
**worse,** *adv.*, pis, plus mal; **from bad to —,** de mal en pis.
**worst, the —,** le pire.
**worth, be —,** valoir; **be — more,** valoir mieux; **be — while,** valoir la peine.
**would** (*past tense of 'will'*), **he — not do it,** il ne voulait pas le faire; **— to God!,** plût à Dieu! *'Would' is sometimes expressed by the imperf. indic.*
**wound,** *v.*, blesser.
**wound,** *n.*, blessure, *f.*
**wrap,** envelopper.
**wretch,** *n.*, malheureux, *m.*; misérable, *m.*
**wretched,** *adj.*, malheureux, misérable.
**wring, — from,** arracher (*'from', of things* de; *of pers.* à).
**write,** écrire.
**writer,** écrivain, *m.*
**writing,** écriture, *f.*
**writing-table,** table (*f.*) à écrire.
**wrong,** mal, *m.*; tort, *m.*; **be —,** avoir tort; **do —,** faire (du) tort (à).
**wrong,** *adv.*, mal.

Y

**yard,** cour, *f.*; yard, *m.*; mètre, *m.*
**year,** année, *f.*; an, *m.*
**yes,** oui; si.
**yesterday,** hier; **day before —,** avant hier.
**yet,** cependant, toutefois, pourtant; encore.
**yield,** fléchir (sous); céder (à); se rendre (à).
**you,** vous; tu; te; toi.
**young,** jeune.
**your,** votre, vos; ton, ta, tes.
**yours,** le vôtre; le tien; à vous; à toi.
**yourself,** vous; te; toi; vous-même; toi-même.
**youth,** jeunesse, *f.*

Z

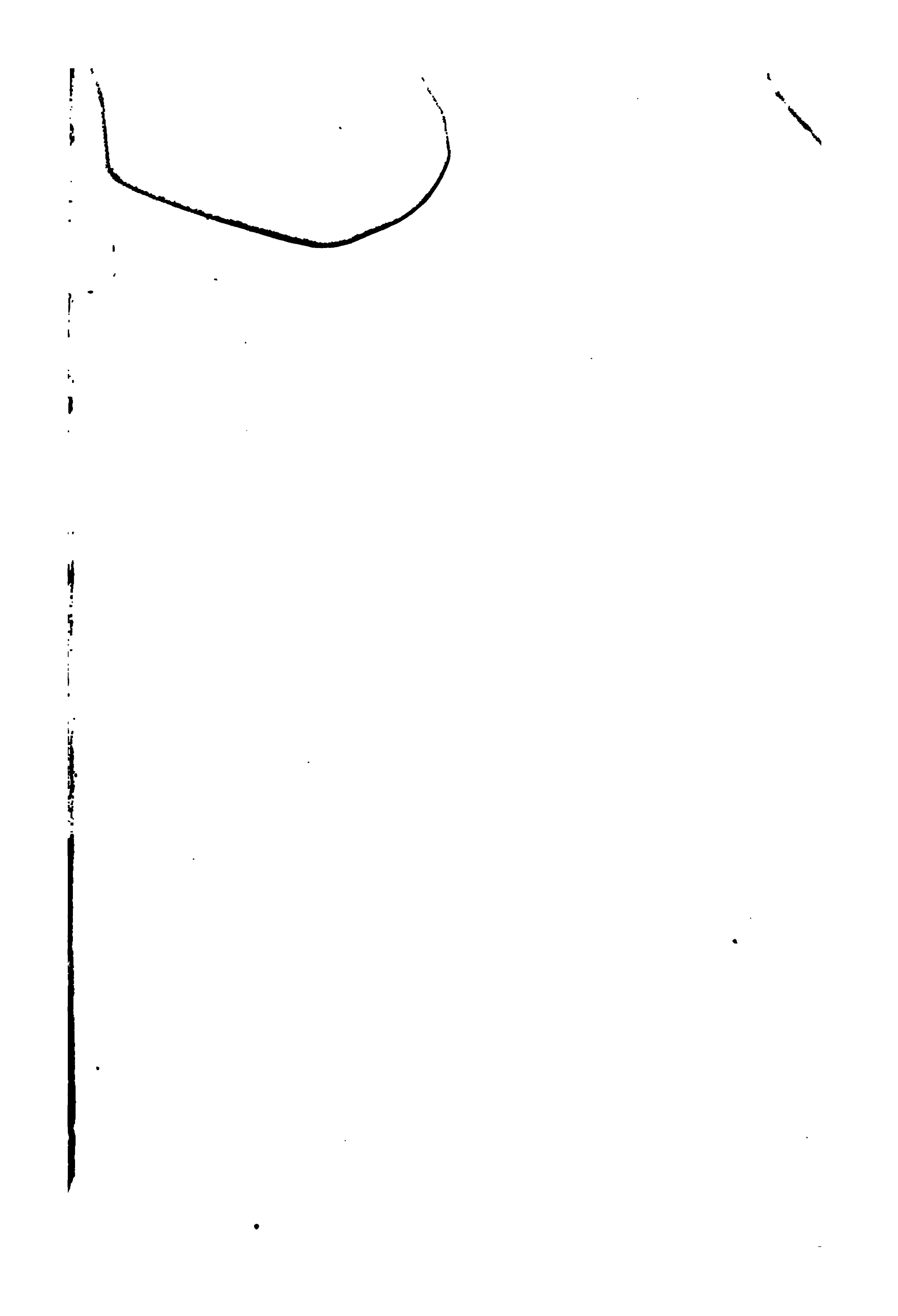
**zeal,** zèle, *m.*

# INDEX

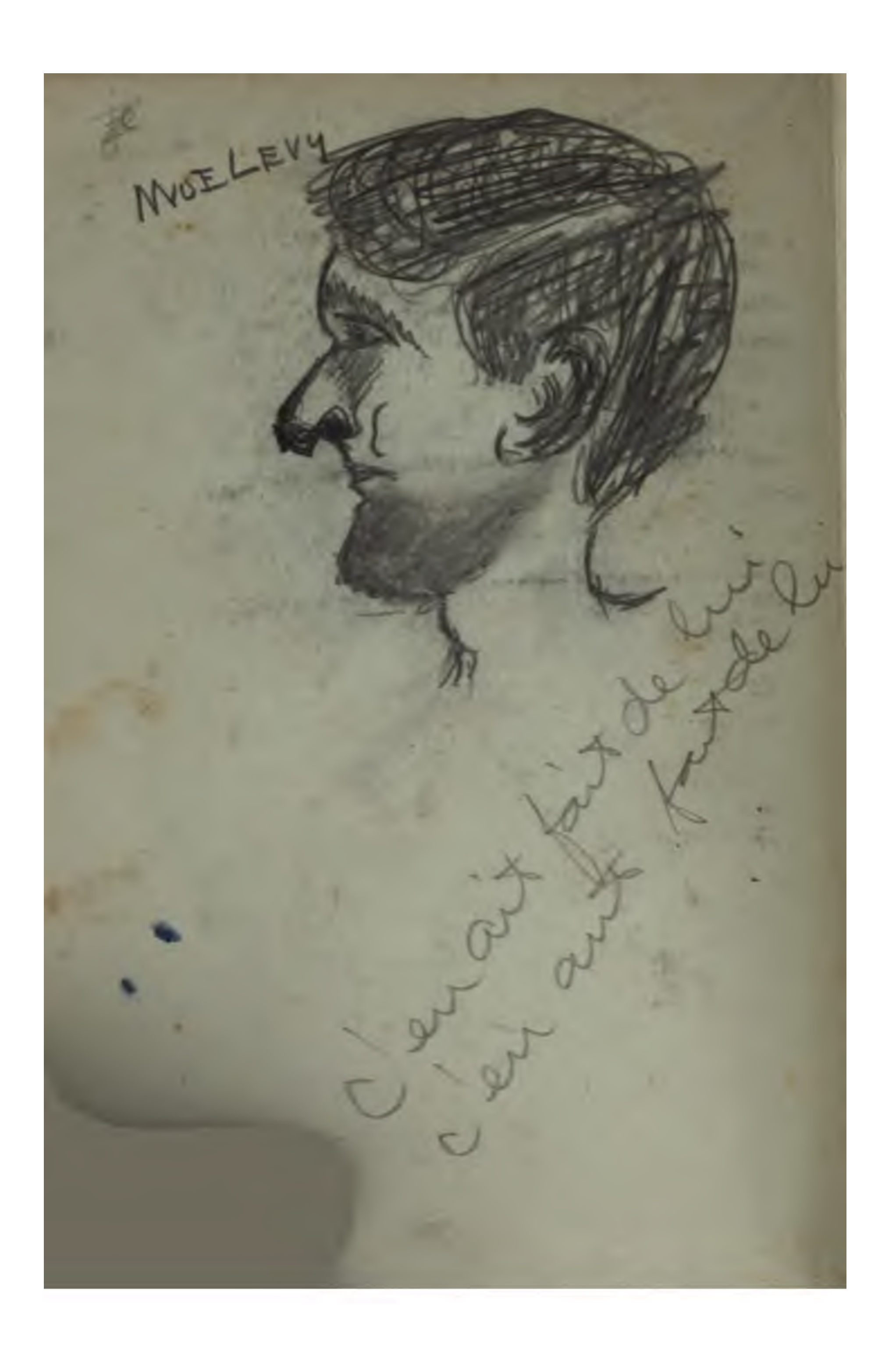
The references are to the paragraphs


**à**; **à** + pronoun to denote possession, 63; with infinitive, 141
Adjective, 9–14; agreement, 9; position, 11, 12; difference of meaning depending on position, 13, 14
Adverb, 146–149; position, 146; used as adjective, 146, note; affirmation, 147; negation, 148, 149; **ne** alone as negative, 149
Article, 1, 2; with nouns, 1; repetition, 1, (5); omitted, 1 (note), 2; partitive, 5–7; for possessive, 57; for demonstrative, 68
**avoir**, idiomatic phrases with, 128
**ce**, **ce** and **il**, 75; as real subject, 76; as representative subject, 78
**ceci**, 73
**cela**, 73
Conditional, 108, 109, 126
Conjunctive pronoun, see 'pronoun'
**de**, with names of countries, 1; with infinitive, 142
Definite article, see 'article'
**demi**, 10
Demonstrative adjective, 65–68; agreement, 65; **-ci** or **-là** for emphasis, 67; replaced by article, 68
Demonstrative pronoun, 69–73; agreement, 69; **ceci**, **cela**, 73
**devoir**, 110, 111
Disjunctive pronoun, see 'pronoun'
**dont**, 41
**en**, with names of countries, 1; as pronoun, 29; for possession, 60
**faire**, idiomatic phrases with, 138; with infinitive, 24, 144
**falloir**, 110, 115
**feu**, 10
Future tense, 107
**il**, **ce** and **il**, 75; as real subject, 77; as representative subject, 78
Imperfect, 103; imperfect subjunctive generally avoided, 127
Indefinite article, see 'article'
Indefinites, 80–85
Infinitive, 139–144; without preposition, 139; with preposition, 140; with **à**, 141; with **de**, 142; used instead of a subordinate clause, 143; with **entendre**, **faire**, etc., 144
Interrogative adjective, 50, 51
Interrogative pronoun, 43–49; table, 43
**laisser**, 24
**le**, pronoun in predicate, 25
**lequel**, 34, 35, 41 (note), 44
**même**, 85, 27 (6)
**ne**, pleonastic, 151; as negative, 149
**nu**, 10
Numerals, 15, 16
**on**, 83
**où**, 39
Participles, 129–137; present, 129–131; past, 132–137
Partitive, 5–7; omission of article, 6; omission of both **de** and article, 7
Past anterior, 106
Past definite, 104
Past indefinite, 105
Personal pronoun, 18–28; table, 18; conjunctive, 19, 22; disjunctive, 19, 22, 27; position of object, 20, 21, 23, 24; position of subject, 88
**personne**, 84
Pluperfect, 106

Possessive adjective, 53–60; agreement, 54; **mon, ton, son** for **ma, ta, sa**, 55; repetition, 56; replaced by article, 57; replaced by **en**, 60
Possessive pronoun, table, 61; replaced by **à**+pronoun, 63
**pouvoir**, 110, 117
Present, 102
Pronoun, see 'personal', 'possessive', etc.
**que**, 46, 47, 48; as predicate nominative, 38
**quel**, 50, 51
**quelque**, 81
**quoi**, 40, 49
Reflexive pronoun, 28
Relative pronoun, 32–41; table, 32; agreement, 36; not omitted, 37
**rien**, 84
Subject, 87–100; position, 87–92; pronoun subject, 88; noun subject, 89, 90; placed after verb in relative clauses, 91; logical subject anticipated by **il** or **ce**, 92; agreement of verb and subject, 93–100; collective subject, 94; after **ce**, 96; compound subject, 97–99
Subjunctive, 112–114, 116, 118–120, 122; in dependent clauses, 113, 114, 116, 118–120; in adjectival clauses, 116; in adverbial clauses, 118; after **que** replacing a conjunction, 119; in independent clauses, 122; list of conjunctions with subjunctive and indicative, 120
**tenir**, idiomatic phrases with, 150
Tenses, uses of, 102–109; sequence of, 123–127
**tout**, 82
**venir**, idiomatic phrases with, 145
Verb, agreement, 93–100
**vouloir**, 121
**y**, 30, 31






MOE LEVY
C'en ait fait de lui

Resolved [illegible]
legislation should be shaped
towards the gradual abolition of protective
tariff

Inter-collegiate Debate

Probablement
Condamné

Ca

Ca y'est [illegible]

ca n'est [illegible]

ca n'est [illegible]

ca n'est [illegible]

ca n'est [illegible]

